1	REPORTER'S RECORD				
2	VOLUME 7 OF 21 VOLUME(S)				
3	TRIAL COURT CAUSE NO. 1370 COURT OF APPEALS				
4	COURT OF APPEALS CASE NO. 02-1/4-00412-CR DEBRA SPISAK				
5	Clerk				
6	THE STATE OF TEXAS) IN THE 372ND JUDICIAL)				
7					
8	}				
9	VS.) DISTRICT COURT)				
10					
11	}				
12	THOMAS OLIVAS) TARRANT COUNTY, TEXAS				
13					
14	* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *				
15					
16	TRIAL ON MERITS COMMENCES				
17	* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *				
18	On the 10th day of September, 2014, the following				
19	proceedings came on to be heard in the above-entitled and numbered cause before the Honorable Scott Wisch,				
20	Presiding Judge, held in Fort Worth, Tarrant County, Texas;				
21	Proceedings reported by computerized machine shorthand with assisted realtime transcription.				
22					
23					
24	KAREN B. MARTINEZ, CERTIFIED SHORTHAND REPORTER Official Court Reporter				
25	372nd Judicial District Court Tarrant County, Texas				

```
1
    APPEARANCES:
2
    ATTORNEYS FOR THE STATE:
3
       HONORABLE R. KEVIN ROUSSEAU
       SBOT NO: 17324950
       HONORABLE TAMLA S. RAY
4
       SBOT NO: 24046687
5
       Assistant Criminal District Attorneys
       Tim Curry Criminal Justice Center
       Fort Worth Texas 76196
6
       Phone: 817-884-1400
7
       Fax:
             817-884-3333
    ATTORNEYS FOR THE DEFENDANT:
8
       HONORABLE TIM MOORE
9
       SBOT NO: 14378300
       Attorney at Law
10
       115 West 2nd Street, Suite 202
       Fort Worth, Texas 76102
11
       Phone: 817-332-3822
              817-332-2768
12
       Fax:
13
              - AND -
       HONORABLE JOETTA L. KEENE
14
       SBOT NO: 11165800
15
       Attorney at Law
       204 South Mesquite Street
       Arlington, Texas 76010
16
       Phone: 817-275-6611
               817 - 275 - 6621
17
       Fax:
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
```

ı						
1	CHRONOI	LOGICAL I	NDEX			
2	Volume 7 of 21					
3	TRIAL ON MERITS COMMENCES					
4	September 10, 2014			Pa	age	Vol.
5	Three Witnesses Sworn				6	7
6	The Court Continues Jury	The Court Continues Jury Instructions 10				7
7	The Court's Introduction	to Jury T	rial		25	7
8	The Court Calls Case For Trial				7	
9	Reading of Indictment				29	7
10	Not Guilty Pleas Entered I	oy Defend	ant		32	7
11	State's Opening Statement	by Mr. R	ousseau		33	7
12	Defendant's Opening Stater	ment by M	s. Keene.		46	7
13	STATE'S WITNESSES	Direct	Cross	Voir Dire		Vol.
14	Gutierrez, Toni	53,66	63,68			7
15	Lopez, Issac	73,120,				7
16	Lopez, Celia Murillo	127 134				7
17	Arias, Jason	156	183			7
18	Kornegay, Robert	189	205			7
19	Hicks, Lester	214	242	249,2	257	7
20	Mathews, Officer Jamon	260,296	277			7
21	Recessed for the Day			3	302	7
22	Court Reporter's Certifica	ate		3	303	7
23						
24						
25						

1	ALPHABETICAL LISTING OF WITNESSES					
2			Direct	Cross	Voir Dire	Vol.
3	Arias,	Jason	156	183		7
4 5	Gutier	rez, Toni	53,66	63,68		7
5 6	Hicks,	Lester	214	242	249,257	7
7	Korneg	ay, Robert	189	205		7
8	Lopez,	Celia Murillo	134			7
9	Lopez,	Issac	73,120, 127	105,125		7
10	Mathew	s, Officer Jamon		277		7
11			EXHIBITS			
12 13	STATE'S NO. DESCRIPTION OFFERED ADMITTED VOL.				<u>'OL</u> .	
14	1	Audio Disc (Tarra	nt - 1376698	R-RR-SX1. 148	mp3) 148	7
15	2	Large Aerial Phot	ograph	84	85	7
16	3	Large Diagram		176	176	7
17	9	Photograph		96	96	7
18	13	Photograph		96	96	7
19	164	Large Photo on Bl	ack Board	240	240	7
20	165	Chart on Easel Pa	ıper	67	67	7
21						
22						
23						
24						
25						

1	DEFEND <i>A</i> <u>NO</u> .		<u>IPTION</u>		OFFERED	ADMITTED	VOI
2	1		Photograp	n h	108	108	<u>voc</u> . 7
3	2		Photograp		108	108	, 7
1	3		on Easel		108	108	7
5	4				119	120	7
3			on Easel				7
7	5	Chart	on Easel	raper	295	296	1
3	/*\ D	 -	والإعلام مراسم	- dood	£ a. a. & la		<u> </u>
Э	() Der	iotes a	an exnibil	t designated	ior the	record OI	пу.
)							
1							
2							
3							
4							
5							
6							
7							
3							
Э							
)							
1							
2							
3							
4							
5							

1	PROCEEDINGS
2	Wednesday, September 10, 2014 9:40 a.m.
3	(OPEN COURT, DEFENDANT PRESENT, NO JURY)
4	THE COURT: All right. Will y'all state
5	your name to Karen, please. And if she needs spellings,
6	she'll ask, but I think she got it from Mr. Moore.
7	What's your full, legal name?
8	THE WITNESS: Bernice Arlene Olivas.
9	THE COURT: Thank you.
10	THE WITNESS: Rosa Olivas.
11	THE COURT: Thank you.
12	THE WITNESS: Bernardo Olivas.
13	THE COURT: Thank you. I need each of you
14	to face me and raise your right hands.
15	(Three witnesses sworn)
16	THE COURT: Is that a "yes", ma'am?
17	THE WITNESS: Yes.
18	THE COURT: All right. I see you nodding.
19	You have to use words. She can't write down nods.
20	0kay?
21	Put your hands down.
22	There are certain rules that apply to all
23	witnesses in a trial. Exceptions can be made with the
24	permission of the Court and the parties for family
25	members who don't have anything to say about who

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

committed the crime or whether there was a crime that are only character witnesses, if there were to be a sentencing phase. I've been advised if you were to testify, that would be all you would testify about.

Is that your understanding, as well?
THE WITNESSES: Yes.

THE COURT: All right. Then here's what the general rules are. The general rule is you cannot talk to any witness about anything you know about the case until you are released as a witness and the trial is over. You're supposed to testify about what you know and not base it on what you hear other people say. The general rule is you cannot be present in the courtroom when anyone else testifies for the same reason you can't talk to them outside the courtroom. You're going to be allowed to remain in the courtroom, but you're strictly prohibited from talking to each other or anyone else about what you see or hear during the course of the trial, unless you're speaking in private with the attorneys for either side or their staffs, who are governed by the Court rules and don't share that with other people.

Do you understand that instruction?

THE WITNESSES: Yes, sir.

THE COURT: Make sure you hear and

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
understand any question asked, and if you can't hear or
don't understand, then say so, but never guess.
                                                 If vou
do understand the question asked, then answer that
question, stop and wait for the next question.
don't keep talking because it's not responsive to the
question and it will wear her hands out before the trial
         There has to be a question, pause, answer,
is over.
pause.
            Do you understand those instructions?
            THE WITNESSES:
                           Yes.
            THE COURT: All right. Do you promise to
follow those instructions if you're allowed, as a
courtesy by the attorneys, to stay in the courtroom for
the trial?
            THE WITNESSES: Yes. sir.
            THE COURT: All right. Then based on that
promise, you may return to your seats.
            THE WITNESS: Your Honor, just one thing.
would like to at least talk to her, I need to translate
a lot that you have just said.
            THE COURT: You can translate -- well, you
can't sit in the courtroom and translate because you
can't talk about the testimony.
            THE WITNESS:
                          No, I'm not going to.
just some of the guidance that you just provided to us.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
THE COURT: Well, I'm just saying you can't
talk to anyone, in English or Spanish, about anything
you see or hear in the courtroom, including each other.
            THE WITNESS:
                          Okay.
            THE COURT: If -- if you want to sit on the
very back row and would tell her what was said, that she
could have heard, if she understood, that normally would
be okay, but the problem is, no one is allowed to talk
in the gallery because it's distracting to the lawyers
and the court reporter and the jury. So even when we
have interpreters for witnesses and other people, we
have little special equipment and headphones so that it
doesn't disrupt the proceeding.
                          I understand.
            THE WITNESS:
            THE COURT: So I appreciate as a human being
what you want to do, but that's just one of the
occupational hazards of being a family member who's not
bilingual when the proceedings are. And so my respects
to her, but you can't do that.
            THE WITNESS:
                          That's fine.
            THE COURT:
                        Okav.
            THE WITNESS: We understand.
            THE COURT: And the easy way, if you were to
hear, it wouldn't matter, so --
            THE WITNESS:
                          Okav.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
-- so at least you'll be able to
            THE COURT:
hear. And after the trial you can talk to her about
what you heard. Okay?
            THE WITNESS:
                          Thank you.
            THE COURT:
                      All right. Any other questions?
            THE WITNESS:
                          No, sir.
            THE COURT: All right. Then y'all can
return to your seats.
            (Pause in proceedings)
            (Jury seated in courtroom)
            THE COURT: If there's any time during the
course of the trial that you can't hear what's being
said because the attorneys move away from the microphone
or the witness does or maybe they're standing, holding
something up, if you can't hear, cup your hand on your
head and say, "I can't hear," and the attorney will
repeat what they said or I will tell the witness to
repeat the answer. All clear on that one?
            If there's something you can't see and it's
clear from their questioning or discussion that they
think you can, but someone's blocking it or it's too far
away, or on the PowerPoint, or someone's head is in way,
if you get your hand up here and say, "I can't see,"
they'll appreciate it. They can do their job better and
they will either move where you can see or maybe they'll
```

bring it up closer, but they'll make the necessary adjustments. It's not only your right but your duty to do that, just like if you can't hear.

Everyone clear on that one?

SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.

THE COURT: Finally, if due to the hurry-and-wait, due to what I think is pretty good coffee we make in this courtroom, due to the five glasses of iced tea at lunch as you wait for your food, if at any time you are so physically uncomfortable, be it an old football injury or fluid, and you need a break because you're losing your focus, if you will raise your hand and say, "short break," I will guarantee you there's at least four or five other people in the courtroom thinking that that don't have the guts to raise their hand yet. And that's why the jury room is 30 feet away.

We will take regular breaks. We may take more breaks than you want. Any time I, as the umpire, have to do a booth review, if you will, not to use the game analogies again, but I need to talk to the lawyers openly and quickly to figure out what the law allows and what the law requires as the far as the direction and the order of the trial, if I can't handle it shortly, I send you out so we can handle it quickly.

And what I talk to them in or out of the courtroom, when I rule on objections, when I tell them things, when they tell me things, it's not evidence and it's not to be considered by you in deciding whether the witness does or doesn't know what they're talking about, whether they're truthful or accurate, all or neither. You make that independent determination. Don't get caught up by what the little man behind the curtain is doing.

In the same regard, you may have noticed yesterday during jury selection -- because these lawyers both did excellent jobs talking to you, educating you, and listening to you -- I have 770 other cases besides this one, which are in various states. If you think of this as an airport, some are in the hangers, some are at the gate, some are on the tarmac waiting to go, go to the runway, and you have taken off. This is the most important case to me, absolutely to these lawyers and absolutely to you.

But in order that other cases can proceed in an orderly fashion when it's their turn for trial, I am doing things all the time. And if people bring me something from my left side or the sheriff hands me something in the low pass behind my stairs, that has nothing to do with this case. That's so I can sign

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
That's so things can progress. I'll respond to
things.
official e-mails and correspondence and documents that
are sent to electronically sign. I will do that all
along, and it has nothing to do with your factfinding
mission or respect or disrespect to these lawyers or
anywhere else. And if I happen to miss something
because I'm multitasking, I have Karen here to read it
back to me to make sure I get it right so I make a
proper ball or strike ruling or foul or fair ruling.
            Does that make sense?
            SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.
            THE COURT: If at any time that multitasking
is distracting to you doing your job, well, you've got
to let me know and it will stop, and I'll stay late and
come in early and it will all get done. But if it's not
distracting to you, I just don't want you to be
wondering what I'm doing that has something to do with
this case, which is absolutely zero, unless I'm ruling
on an objection to give direction to the lawyers.
            So is everyone good with that?
            SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.
            THE COURT: Let's go back to the blue card
then.
            We read one through three. Everyone
remember those?
```

SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: 1 THE COURT: Oh, and just a point of 2 3 information, did y'all read the rest of this on your own last night? 4 SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: 5 Yes. THE COURT: We thank you. Did you follow 6 7 them to the best of your ability? 8 SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. 9 THE COURT: We thank you even more for that. 10 Rule four, do not even discuss this case 11 among yourselves until after you have heard all of the 12 evidence, the Court's Charge -- which is a confusing 13 term, but it means the legal document charging you to 14 follow these rules, apply these definitions, apply this 15 law and reach a proper verdict. And it has verdict forms at the end for you to choose based on the results 16 17 of your deliberations. I think Mr. Moore may have 18 mentioned it's often a 10- to 15-page document that has 19 all this information that you take into the jury room --20 you've heard the attorneys' arguments -- which are at 21 the end of the trial after the evidence is presented. 22 And I expect you'll ask the State -- you'll hear the 23 State ask you to vote guilty and the Defense ask you to 24 vote not guilty and tell you why it's appropriate -- and 25 then you will be sent to the jury room and told consider

your verdict, in other words, deliberate. That happens at the tail end of the trial, the stern of the ship. That happens after all the evidence is in, you have the rules of law, you have the arguments of counsel ringing in your ears. And then, and only then, are you allowed to talk about anything you have seen or heard during the course of the trial.

All right. The rules strictly require deliberations to occur only when you know you have all the evidence and you have the rules for deliberations. And that's not how we watch football games or concerts or plays or movies. If there's an intermission, we talk about what we've seen. We comment on who's doing the right or the wrong calls or whose fault the interception was or who's doing a good or a bad job. That's human nature. During the trial you can't talk about anything until you can talk about everything at the same time.

A juror once told me I ought to look at it as don't try to put the pieces -- don't try to put the jigsaw puzzle together unless you're absolutely sure you have all the pieces or you might head off in the wrong direction and make it more complicated when you get the rest of the pieces, and, plus, you waste a lot of time and energy.

So is everyone clear on what I'm talking

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

about on this? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. THE COURT: I'm going to read five, six and seven together. Do not make any investigation about the facts of this case. Occasionally we have a juror who privately seeks out information about a case on trial, but this is improper. All evidence must be presented in open court so that each side may question the witnesses and make proper objections if they apply. If you know of, or learn anything about, this case except from the evidence admitted during the course of this trial, you should tell me about it at once. Six, do not make personal inspections, observations, investigations, or experiments, nor

Six, do not make personal inspections, observations, investigations, or experiments, nor personally view premises, things or articles that are not produced in court. And do not let anyone else do any of these things for you.

Seven, do not tell other jurors your own personal experiences nor those of other persons, nor relate any special information. A juror may have special knowledge of matters such as business, technical or professional matters or may have expert knowledge or opinions in some field or may know what happened in this

or some other lawsuit, but to tell the other jurors any of this information is a violation of these instructions.

Five, six and seven stand for the basic proposition, you are judges of the facts. You are not witnesses for or against either side. You're certainly not expert witnesses to testify in the jury room when your oath is to render a true verdict, not to tell the truth in the jury room.

Does everyone understand that?

SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.

THE COURT: You remember that Tarrant/Denton County line example I gave during jury selection about the property line moves because there's a dispute of where it should be? Let's say you're here in that trial. And let's just say you could drive a mile out of your way going home in North Tarrant County and go out and look at the place where the property line is disputed. And after you've driven from downtown Fort Worth to just past Babe's in Roanoke, it would be no trouble for you to just drive a little further and look at what they've been talking about in the courtroom. The law says don't do that. You're making yourself a witness. Let the people whose job it is to do that come in and testify about it and explain it to you, but don't

go make yourself a witness.

It may be that the land where this dispute is going on used to be your grandmother's farm and you used to swing in the old oak tree in the tire swing that is probably still there and you've been on that property a hundred times as a kid, but the law says don't decide where the line is based on your childhood memories.

Make that decision based on what's presented in court and don't tell anyone else about the old oak tree or the tire swing, because then you're testifying and not judging.

Everyone clear on that?

SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.

THE COURT: It may be you're a master surveyor and you know more about surveying in one thumb than any other 20 surveyors know in their whole body. And it may be you're listening to testimony about surveying and you understand it better and it may be your reasons for trusting or not trusting what a surveyor says or may be more knowledgeable than a layperson who's having to listen to everything and how surveying work is explained. You can use your own common sense, your life experience, your training, your education in forming your own opinions. You brought all those things with you to the jury room, but you cannot

```
1
    give surveying lessons in the jury room, because then
2
    you're testifying.
3
                If the lawyers need you to understand how
    surveying works in order to present their cases, it is
4
5
    their duty to educate the jury on how surveying works.
    It's not another juror's duty to share specialized
6
7
    information.
8
                Does everyone understand that?
9
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
                                        Yes.
                THE COURT: That would be true whether the
10
11
    field was education or medicine or surveying or anything
12
    else. You know, if there's medical testimony, if you're
13
    an RN or a doctor or a medical assistant, you can't
    forget your education, but you don't explain things to
14
    other jurors who are not familiar to your profession.
15
16
                Is everyone clear on that?
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
17
                                        Yes.
18
                THE COURT: Okay. Are there any questions
19
    about five, six or seven?
20
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
21
                THE COURT: All right. Here's one more P.S.
22
    on that, based upon the length of this trial.
                                                    If by
    chance -- remember when I asked you if you knew each
23
24
    other on jury duty?
25
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
                                        Yes.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

THE COURT: If some witness were to come into the trial and you recognize them from some past life experience, be it favorable, unfavorable or neutral, whether they're a customer, a high school classmate, go to your church, work at the same place you do, you are to judge them based upon what happens in this courtroom and not give or take away points from any past or prior life experience. Do you understand that? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. THE COURT: If a witness comes in here that you just hate their guts so much or you love them so much from some past life association, that they could never lie, they could never be wrong, you have a duty to bring that to the attention of the deputy so he can bring that to the attention of me. Does everyone understand that? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. THE COURT: But if it's someone you know, familiar with and you can judge them here and not give or take away points, then there's nothing wrong with that, that's life. And in little counties, that happens all the time. In urban areas it's rare, but the rules are the same. Okay? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:

```
THE COURT: Everyone remember eight from
1
    last night?
2
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
3
                                       Yes.
                THE COURT: Eight's P.S., you know, the
4
5
    newspaper, television, radio, media coverage was covered
6
    by eight.
7
                Everyone remember all that?
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
8
9
                THE COURT: All right. At the conclusion of
10
    all the evidence, I will submit to you a written charge,
11
    the legal document, you know, with the law and the
12
    instructions and the verdict forms. Since you will need
13
    to consider all the evidence admitted by me, it is
14
    important that you pay close attention to the evidence
15
    as it is presented.
16
                And I'll be frank. The longer the trial,
17
    the more important it is. Okay. If this were a stop
18
    sign, roll through a stop sign, one witness, one-and-a-
19
    half-hour trial and you decide did they stop or not,
20
    that rule is important, but it's easy to follow.
21
    Because the jury gets picked, the evidence is put on and
22
    you deliberate all in the same day, and most humans can
23
    handle that. When you know it's going to be two or
24
    three weeks, you have to pay particularly good attention
25
    just like when you know you're going to have to take a
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

test based on lectures in three weeks, you have to pay careful attention in class so you don't miss anything.

Does everyone understand that?

SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.

THE COURT: Because there is no book. The court reporter is here as a safety valve in case you guys get into what the law calls a dispute. I call it a friendly and civil argument about what someone said.

If -- let's go back to the surveyor situation, and let's say the old oak tree is next to the property line and half of you think Surveyor Bob or Surveyor Ann or Surveyor whoever said the Tarrant/Denton property line is 8.2 blank north/northeast of the old oak tree, and half of you think they said meters and half of you think they said feet, and it's important for you to make a fair decision whether they said meters or feet, if you send me a note out that says, hey, "We're in a dispute. Some of us think it was meters. Some sav it was feet that Surveyor Bob or Surveyor Ann said. you clarify and resolve our dispute," and the answer is "Absolutely." "Karen, go to work. Look up Surveyor Bob's testimony." And you'll get an answer that says, "Question, where was the property line located in reference to the old oak tree? Answer, 8.2 meters, feet, yards, centimeters," whatever the answer was,

1 north/northeast, and that's all you get. 2 If you send out a note out and say, hey, 3 "You know, it's been three weeks, Judge, cut us some We don't remember what Surveyor Bob said," 4 slack. 5 you'll get an answer that says, hey, You are the factfinders, not me, and certainly not Karen." It's 6 7 your job to remember that. I can resolve disagreements, 8 but I cannot just provide information because you don't 9 remember. Might not be a fair rule, but it's been in 10 our system for 250 years and I don't have the authority 11 or the desire to change it. 12 So everyone clear on that? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. 13 14 THE COURT: Does anyone have any questions 15 about one through eight and the court reporter rule? 16 SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: No. 17 THE COURT: All right. Then let's look at 18 the bottom of the paragraph. I get no pleasure reading this, but it is absolutely important that I do so. 19 20 Texas law permits proof of any violation of 21 these rules of proper jury conduct. And by this I mean 22 that jurors and others may be called upon to testify in 23 open court about acts of jury misconduct. So I instruct 24 you, therefore, to follow carefully all instructions 25 which I have given you, as well as any others which you

1 will later receive while this case is on trial. 2 You remember in the discussion in jury 3 selection and someone's immigration status was discussed during deliberations by the juror and there were those 4 5 concerns and I said was that in evidence and she said yes and I kind of relaxed? Well, because if it hadn't 6 7 been, that would have been jury misconduct, because it 8 wasn't evidence, had nothing to do with the trial. Ιf 9 it was in evidence, it was fair game to figure how would 10 that affect that person's ability to comply or the 11 effects of the sentence. 12 Do y'all remember that discussion? SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: 13 Yes. 14 THE COURT: All right. Well, there's a 15 reason for that. Because you're not supposed to inject 16 stuff in the jury room that's not in the trial, whether 17 it be your life experience or testimony or evidence or 18 observations of what people do not in the hall versus 19 what they said in the courtroom. 20 So everyone good with all this? 21 SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes. 22 THE COURT: All right. Excellent. Because 23 if you follow all these rules that I give you, either 24 verbally, in writing in this blue card, in writing in

the lengthy document you get for deliberations, there's

two very important things that are going to result.

Number one is you will render a true verdict according to the law. And number two is both sides will get a fair trial regardless of the ultimate decision you make after you decide what are the facts and what do they or do they not prove.

Do you have any housekeeping questions that don't deal with the specific law and facts of this case? Can we take notes? No. That's the most common question. All right.

Members of the jury, the trial of a criminal case generally takes place in the following fashion:

First thing that will happen, I will ask
Defense Counsel and the Defendant to stand. I will ask
a representative of the State to come forward and the
allegations or charges in each of the paragraphs of the
indictment will be read in open court verbatim. And at
the conclusion of the reading of the indictment, I will
accept the Defendant's pleas individually to each
charging paragraph of the indictment.

After the Defendant has entered his pleas, I have to give both sides the opportunity, if they wish, to make what's known as an opening statement. An opening statement is when an attorney stands before you and tells what you they expect the evidence is going to

show during the presentation of their case. I remind you, as I have repeatedly, what the lawyers say, for that matter what the judge says, is never evidence unless you're specifically instructed that it can be.

An opening statement some people have referred to as a roadmap of what to look for so you understand it if and when it arrives and particularly understand it in the context of the rest of the case.

After any opening statements have been given, the State is called upon to present its case. The State goes first. As you recall, they have the burden of proof. When the State has presented its case, when they're done, they will stand up and say the State rests. When the State rests its case, the Defense is given the opportunity to present evidence, even though by now you should understand they have no legal obligation to do so. They just have a right to do so, if they choose. So after the Defense presents its evidence, or even if they present nothing at all, when they're through, they will stand up and say the Defense rests.

If the Defense does put on evidence, the State has the right to address that evidence in what's called the rebuttal phase of the trial and to put on rebuttal evidence. If the State puts on more, the

Defense is given the opportunity to put on more if they choose to address the new evidence from the State.

So you could have both sides go back and forth with witnesses, one or more sometimes. It could be the State puts on the only evidence you hear and your job is simply to judge the character and quality of that evidence. But in any event, when both sides have presented everything that will be presented, you will hear them stand up and say we close. When you hear the "close" word, that's a signal to you and a signal to me that all evidence has been presented. It's particularly a signal to me of "Okay, Judge, and you Karen draft the Court's Charge," the law and the instructions which gives the jury each and every opportunity and possible consideration for charges that have been raised by the evidence.

If the -- if the evidence is raised, like the aggravated robbery example I gave yesterday, that it may not be a real gun, well, the jury decides that. If there's no evidence disputing whether it's a real gun, it's whether the crime happened or not, then there's just one charge. There could be a lot of charges. You remember how that works? So it's my job to look at the evidence and anything that any reasonable jury might think is possible during their deliberations. I give

you that option. And so that depends on how long the charge is, depending on what the evidence is. And you and I will find that out at the same time.

will be brought back into the courtroom. I will have to read it to you word for word, even though you take it with you into the jury room. But when I've read you the law and the instructions, each side is given one last opportunity to address you in what we refer to as final arguments or closing statements. And at that time I expect you will hear both sides argue to you and tell you why you should vote guilty or not guilty and based upon the evidence that's actually been presented, not what them anticipate will be presented. Again, what they say is not evidence, but they have the right and, quite frankly, the duty to point out things to you that they think are important for your deliberations.

So after the final arguments or closing statements are delivered, you are then sent back into the jury room. You're given the law in your hands. This 10- to 15-page document. You're told to select a presiding juror to manage your deliberations. And then, and only then, you are released from rule four and you may discuss anything and everything you've heard during the course of the trial, as it is your duty to do so.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
And you deliberate for such period of time, be it
two minutes or two days or any other amount of time.
The law doesn't put a maximum or minimum.
                                           It's when
your conscience and your oath says we have reached a
unanimous verdict consistent with the law of Texas and
facts as we have determined them to be. And then you
sign a note and let us know when your deliberations are
done. That is the procedure for a trial.
            Are both sides ready to proceed with the
trial on the merits of The State of Texas versus Thomas
01ivas?
            MR. ROUSSEAU:
                           State is ready, Your Honor.
            MR. MOORE: We're ready.
            THE COURT: All right. Then, Counsels,
Mr. Olivas, if y'all will, please, stand.
            If I may have a representative of the State
come forward.
            Ms. Ray, thank you.
            And, Mr. Moore, I am going to let Ms. Ray
read the indictment stem to stern and then I'll go back
and accept the individual pleas to each charging
paragraph after the entire document has been read.
            MR. MOORE:
                        Yes, sir.
            MS. RAY: Indictment Number 1376698R, in the
name and by authority of the State of Texas, the grand
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

jurors of Tarrant County, Texas, duly elected, tried, impaneled, sworn and charged to inquire of offenses committed in Tarrant County, in the State of Texas, upon their oaths do present in and so the Criminal District Court No. 3, of said County, that Thomas Olivas, hereinafter called Defendant, in the County of Tarrant and state aforesaid, on or about the 20th day of March 2011, did then and there intentionally or knowingly cause the death of an individual, Mechelle Gandy, by cutting her or stabbing her with an item, the exact nature of which is unknown to the grand jury, and during the same criminal transaction the Defendant intentionally or knowingly caused the death of another individual, Asher Olivas, by setting fire to his body by igniting a combustible or flammable material with an open flame.

Paragraph Two. And it is further presented in and to said Court that the Defendant, in the County of Tarrant and State aforesaid, on or about the 20th day of March, 2011, did then and there intentionally or knowingly cause the death of an individual, Mechelle Gandy, but cutting her or stabbing her with an item, the exact nature of which is unknown to the grand jury, and during the same criminal transaction the Defendant intentionally or knowingly caused the death of another

individual, Asher Olivas, by setting fire to a combustible or flammable material, with an open flame, in close proximity to the body of Asher Olivas.

Paragraph Three. And it is further presented in and to said Court that the Defendant, in the County of Tarrant and State aforesaid, on or about 20th day of March, 2011, did then and there intentionally or knowingly cause the death of an individual, Mechelle Gandy, by cutting her or stabbing her with an item, the exact nature of which is unknown to the grand jury, and during the same criminal transaction the Defendant intentionally or knowingly caused the death of another individual, Asher Olivas, by suffocating him by means unknown to the grand jury.

Paragraph Four. And it is further presented in and to said Court that the Defendant, in the County of Tarrant and State aforesaid, on or about the 20th day of March, 2011, did then and there intentionally or knowingly cause the death of an individual, Mechelle Gandy, by cutting her or stabbing her with an item, the exact nature of which is unknown to the grand jury, and during the same criminal transaction the Defendant intentionally or knowingly caused death of another individual, Asher Olivas, in a manner and by a means which is unknown to the grand jury.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Against the peace and dignity of the State, signed Joe Shannon, Jr., the Criminal District Attorney of Tarrant County, Texas, and the foreman of the grand jury. THE COURT: All right. Thomas Olivas, in Indictment Number 1376698R, to the allegations of capital murder as set out in Paragraph One of this indictment, what is your plea, guilty or not guilty? THE DEFENDANT: Not guilty, Your Honor. THE COURT: To the allegation of capital murder as set out in Paragraph Two of the same indictment, what is your plea, sir, guilty or not guilty? THE DEFENDANT: Not guilty. THE COURT: To the allegation in Paragraph Three of the same indictment, to the allegation of capital murder as so stated, what is your plea, guilty or not guilty? THE DEFENDANT: Not guilty. THE COURT: To the allegation of capital murder as set out in Paragraph Four of that same indictment, what is your plea, guilty or not guilty? THE DEFENDANT: Not guilty. THE COURT: Y'all may be seated. Let the record reflect the Defendant entered

1 pleas of not guilty to all charging paragraphs in open court, in the presence of the jury. 2 3 Does the State wish to make opening 4 statement? 5 MR. ROUSSEAU: We do, Your Honor. THE COURT: You have the floor. 6 7 MR. ROUSSEAU: Thank you, Judge. 8 STATE'S OPENING STATEMENT 9 MR. ROUSSEAU: Good morning, folks. SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: 10 Morning. 11 MR. ROUSSEAU: This is about the last time 12 we'll get to speak to each other I suppose, and both of 13 us speak, at least for a long time because we're going 14 to buckle in now for what's going to be a pretty long 15 haul. The judge has told you, and we've all spent a lot of time yesterday explaining to you folks, that this is 16 17 going to be a long trial. And during the course of the 18 next two to three weeks, however long it takes --19 sometimes these things are very difficult to estimate, 20 because you never know how long witnesses may take. 21 Can't always anticipate delays. And sometimes they But two to three weeks I think is fair. 22 happen. 23 Over the course of the next two or 24 three weeks, we're going to bring you an awful lot of 25 evidence. Some of it will be very small pieces of

evidence. Some of it will be large pieces of evidence. Some of it will be relatively unimportant, while others is -- other bits are terribly important. But it is going to be our intention and our plan to bring you all of the evidence that we can, all the evidence that we have. And we will do everything we can to explain to you what efforts we have made to obtain evidence that we don't have.

We will bring you evidence, whether it directly points a finger of guilt at the Defendant or whether it doesn't point at anybody at all, because we want you to understand that we have done the work. When we are done here -- when we're done here, finally, one of the things that I do not believe that you will be thinking is: Why didn't they do something else? You will know that much.

On March the 20th, 2011, around ten minutes after 10:00 at night, it was a Sunday, a 9-1-1 call was received by Arlington emergency folks, Arlington Police Department, "There's a fire, a fire at the Presidents Corner Apartments."

We're going to bring to you the person who made that phone call, because that person is an eyewitness to the events that we're going to be talking about. They're going to tell you that there was a fire,

a fire broke had broken out in the apartments right next door to their own, that there was -- there were flames shooting out the back of the apartment, and that they were in an absolute state of panic because they knew, they knew that their neighbor, Mechelle Gandy, and her 13-month-old son, Asher Rion Olivas, were in that apartment. The car was sitting out front. They knew she was -- they knew if she's home -- if that car is there, she's home. And if she's home, the baby is home. And they knew there was a disaster underway.

You're going to hear from the firefighters who responded to that scene. They were there within three and a half minutes. The fire department, the station, is just around the corner. This little -- this area -- and I apologize. I haven't told you this. The area that we're talking about, Presidents Corner Apartment, is in the northwest quadrant of the intersection of Lamar Boulevard and Collins, in North Arlington. A good landmark would be Cowboys Stadium is south -- just south of Interstate 30. This is just on the north side of Interstate 30, roughly, roughly parallel, roughly in a line, and that's where this is taking place.

The firefighters show up and they are then faced with what can only be described as living hell.

The apartment was fully engulfed from the back of the apartment moving into the front of the apartment.

Firefighters immediately entered the apartment. One group goes to the right. They begin searching for victims, while the other -- while the group right behind them proceeds into the apartment with a hose, ready to put out whatever fire they can.

You're going to hear from those firefighters. You're going to hear that the body of Mechelle Gandy was discovered almost immediately in the kitchen, which is just inside the front door and slightly to the left. The firefighters immediately began trying to pull her out. They got her to the front door where they had to hand her off to another group of firefighters, who had by then managed to rush up to the door.

Meanwhile, the other group of firefighters had already entered the apartment searching for victims, had exited, and they were met with a wall of flames, they could go no further than that and had to find another way to enter the apartment, which they did. It took a period of minutes to get the fire knocked down sufficiently to where they could at least enter safely and continue their search.

And they did conduct a search. They

searched for hours and hours and hours and hours looking for Asher Olivas, because it was their understanding that he was there. Mechelle, unfortunately, had -- was dead already. Efforts to resuscitate her were completely futile. She had already been killed.

And you're going to hear the observations of the firefighters on the scene. It was obvious to them immediately this was not a fire victim. She was stabbed to death. They saw it immediately. And they carried her out and they laid her out of harm's way as best they could. But I'm afraid there's not a lot of dignity involved. She's just in a parking lot, just off the sidewalk, in the front of her apartment.

Meanwhile, they know that a baby is supposed to be in that apartment. And so they're searching as best they can, but hours go by and they have not found a body. They have not found little Asher. Meanwhile, police are dispatched over to the home of Mechelle Gandy's parents to make notifications, and also to see -- to try to find out if there's any lead, is there's any other place where Asher might be.

In the process of doing this, in talking to her parents and talking to other members of the family, they come up with the name of Thomas Olivas as the baby's father. And they discover right then, that

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

night, of an ongoing situation where Mechelle Gandy has been attempting to force Thomas Olivas to pay child support, to step up, take responsibility as the father of this child and pay child support. This had been an ongoing situation, and they quickly discover that Mechelle Gandy has also been in communications with Thomas Olivas' live-in girlfriend, his live-in girlfriend and the mother of his child, his other child, the one that he acknowledges.

While the police are there, talking to her family, explaining to them that the -- their daughter is now deceased, that she's been murdered, they get word that Asher's body has been found. And that's at 2:45 in the morning, when the police had been on the scene for four and a half hours -- I'm sorry -- the firefighters had been on the scene for four and a half hours. Ιt takes that long to discover Asher's body, because it's in a room, his room, the only room where he could be and it's in the room that is most destroyed. There's not a single identifiable item left in that room other than a hot water heater, which had been in a closet. closet's all been burned away. There's nothing left of the hot water heater. There's not a single identifiable piece of furniture. Nothing. And Asher is found under a layer of ashes on the springs of the mattress on his

baby bed.

And the police have to make that second notification to the family, second notification within a few hours that now, in addition to their daughter being gone, their grandson is gone, too.

They begin trying to make contact with anybody, anybody that might have any contact with -- might have had any contact with Mechelle who might be able to shed light on this. And they started trying to contact Thomas Olivas right away, because until they found Asher, they didn't know if he was -- hope against hope, he might still be alive. He might possibly be in the custody of his father. No reason to really think that would happen, but who knows. Let's hope for the best. So they were trying. They tried to contact Thomas Olivas, but efforts to contact him failed and went to voicemail.

But the police eventually did catch up with Thomas Olivas. They needed to talk to him and they went to see him the next day. They went to his job, where he was working, at Best Buy. You're going to hear that Thomas Olivas was at that time a member of the United States Air Force Reserve, that he worked at Best Buy selling electronics and that he was a server at a restaurant called Truluck's in Southlake. He lived in

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Grapevine. They caught up with him as he was -- made contact with him as he got back to his apartment. He was driving a vehicle that was not his, belonged to a woman named Amanda Rowe.

Now, they eventually talked to Thomas He voluntarily went down to the police station Olivas. with them. And they -- even though this was an Arlington case, out of courtesy and convenience, they used the Grapevine Police Department. The Grapevine PD made their facilities available for Arlington to use and an interview with Thomas Olivas occurred there at Grapevine. And they interviewed Thomas Olivas off and on, but mostly on, for the better part of five hours. And you're going to hear that interview, and I'm going to tell you -- just warn you in advance, it's going to be long, it's going to be tedious. There will be plenty of moments in there where you think this is, quite frankly, pretty dull, pretty dull, but there are moments that are extremely important.

Information comes out during that interview that is extremely important. Thomas Olivas never acknowledged being the killer here. You're going to hear that. But you're going also to hear Thomas Olivas lie repeatedly about the things that he did the previous night. Remember, this is just the previous night that

he's talking about, about the things that he did the previous night, about the vehicle that he was driving, and about the reasons why that vehicle reeked of gasoline.

You're going to later hear from the state fire marshal's office who will testify that samples that they tested from that fire revealed the presence of gasoline. You're going to hear that there was gasoline found on the bodies of Asher and Mechelle, as well as in the baby's bedroom itself, away from the body. And you're going to hear from the woman who actually owned this car. This is another woman that Rion -- that Thomas had been sleeping with. And she's going to tell you about the explanation that he gave her for needing to borrow a car for that weekend.

But you're also going to hear from Thomas Olivas' now ex-girlfriend, the mother of his child. And she's going to tell you about the events over the course of several months, culminating the week of the murders, four days before the murders, that set this whole thing off. She's going to tell you that she had been in contact with a woman named Mechelle Gandy, who at first she just thought Mechelle Gandy was a crazy person who was trying to pursue her boyfriend, because that was Thomas' explanation to her, but over the course of

several months, more and more information was given to her, and finally in the week, on the Wednesday night before this all happened -- and this happened on a Sunday. On the preceding Wednesday night Rebeca confronted Thomas with this -- with these allegations, specifically that he was, in fact, the father of this woman -- he had been having an affair, that he was the father of this woman's child and if he's not, then why doesn't he step up and prove it, why doesn't he do something about it, take responsibility one way or another.

And she showed him messages and photographs that had been forwarded on her cell phone, that had been sent to her by Mechelle that could only have originated from Thomas. At that, he lost it. The argument became -- the argument did not become physically violent, but it was intense. He threw her out of the apartment at about 10:00, 10:15 at night. She takes the kids and she's preparing to leave. He takes her phone out of her hand, the phone she had shown him, and he throws it into the parking lot where it shatters.

She leaves. She goes to her father's house, who fortunately only lived maybe a half mile away, just around the corner, essentially. And she stayed there and she still lives there to this day.

Then you're going to hear that over the course of the next few days, the Defendant made a rather half-hearted suicide attempt. He took pills, medications that had been prescribed to Rebeca, that had been left at the apartment. He called a couple of friends from out of town, said he wasn't doing well and they offered to come up and stay with him for a day or two just to make sure he's okay. They did. They came into town.

And you're going to hear from one of them. They're going to be here to explain to you the things they did. They left about noon or so on Sunday afternoon, the day of the murders. And then after they left, from about early in the afternoon, right up until about 7:00 o'clock at night, there were a series -- there were dozens and dozens and dozens of telephone communications between Thomas and Mechelle Gandy, dozens, that started with him calling her.

He's going to acknowledge to you in his interview with the police the same things that Rebeca will have said, that this -- that he was aware that Mechelle had instituted legal proceedings with the Attorney General's Office to force him to pay child support, that she had been served with the papers.

That's the way it's done. Both parties are served with

the papers by the Attorney General's Office. She had gotten hers and they had communicated and she had told him that she had some questions about the papers, could they get together and talk about it to see if they could, I don't know, understand the paperwork together.

Arrangements were made for him to go to her apartment that night. He was supposed to meet her that night. He will acknowledge driving to her apartment that night. He will acknowledge getting to just around the corner from her apartment that night, but that's as far as he will go. Instead, he told the police that he drove up and down Lamar Boulevard for hours, that he tried to contact her, but he just couldn't get ahold of her and he finally just gave up.

Ladies and gentlemen, you're going to hear, however, that actual -- he had actual knowledge of what her actual address was, the exact apartment number. All communication between them ceased at around 7:00 o'clock. All communication on his phone, outgoing, ceased at around 7:00 o'clock, give or take. I'm ballparking it here. You'll see the records. Her telephone communications ceased. There had been 50 some-odd communications between them up until that time that day, nothing for about that three-hour window, as if they were in the same room and no longer needed to

communicate by telephone, until 10:07 at night. At 10:07 at night he sends her a text message that says words to this effect, "Sorry, I can't come. I don't have a car," 10:07 at night.

You're going to hear that that text message was sent while it -- while his telephone was in approximately -- was within about a half mile of her apartment. The cell tower that handled that call, that picked up the signal to handle that -- not call, text message, was the one closest to her apartment. It says, "Sorry, I can't come. I've got no phone -- I've got no car." Three minutes later, three minutes later the first 9-1-1 call came in. The place is on fire.

We're going to bring it all to you, ladies and gentlemen. And, as I said, we're going to ask for your patience. We're going to ask you to pay attention and I will just give you fair warning, this is going to be a long trial with a lot of witnesses. We'll do our best to bring it to you in chronological order, but people have schedules, witnesses can sometimes run long. We will do our best. You may have to jump back and forth a little bit in your mind. We will do our best to bring it to you in a coherent and organized fashion.

If you pay attention closely, keep an open mind -- I do invite you to keep open mind -- if you do

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

all that, I have no doubt when this trial is over you're going to be as -- you are going to be completely convinced as to the guilt of Thomas Olivas for the capital murders of Mechelle Gandy and Asher Rion Olivas. Thank you. THE COURT: Does Defense wish to make opening statement at this time or reserve? MS. KEENE: We do, Judge. THE COURT: You may proceed. DEFENDANT'S OPENING STATEMENT MS. KEENE: I've not had a chance to talk with you and I won't really get to again for another couple of weeks. But I want to start off by telling you that Thomas Olivas did not kill Mechelle Gandy. Olivas did not kill that sweet baby, Asher. He simply did not do it. They were victims of a horrific, horrible crime. And the question is, who did it? And it's not the person that's sitting over there.

You will not hear in the next two or three weeks any evidence, any direct evidence that ties him to this crime. Not a single fingerprint, no DNA, no blood on him, no blood anywhere. None of his there. None of hers in his car, in his house, on his clothes. You'll not hear any direct evidence. No actual gas on his clothes. No gas in the car. No gas in his house.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

```
What you are going to hear for two or
three weeks is a lot of inferences, a lot of things that
put him in the suspect column, a column he should be in.
Any time a woman is killed, the father, baby daddy,
husband, whoever, will get put in that column. That is
a given. Unfortunately, it's just the nature of who we
are. But it does not always mean that they did it.
            And the Michael Morton case itself shows
that.
            MR. ROUSSEAU: Your Honor, I'm going to
object to this. This is -- she's out of line and this
is --
            THE COURT: Well, that's arguing outside the
trial record.
            MR. ROUSSEAU: It's pure argument, as well,
Your Honor.
            THE COURT: Well, sustained only to the
Michael Morton comment.
            MS. KEENE: The police confronted Thomas
pretty much immediately after this crime and Thomas
cooperated with the police. Thomas talked to them.
Thomas gave them his telephone, "Here, dump it." "Read
it." "Look at it." It's an iPhone. It's the type of
phone that tells everything about you as a person.
                                                    The
police had that. He gave it to them.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

column.

The clothes, "Here's the clothes." "Search the house." Thomas cooperated. Search, having pictures of his body. He contemplated should I or shouldn't I? "I don't know." "Search of the car?" "I don't know." But in the end he said yes to everything. "Search me." "Look at me." He cooperated with the police. Thomas was the suspect from the get-go and he was a suspect because he was supposed to meet with Mechelle Gandy. That is a fact. It also puts him in the suspect column. No question about it. But Thomas didn't know where she lived and in the text messages you'll even see where she says, "Call me and I'll give you directions." He didn't know where her house was. In fact, when you look at the cell phone records, they're going to be pivotal in this case, period, because they're going to show him driving up and down during this time period. He never saw her that night, because he's driving around and he ends up at a bar where there's some pool and beer. And that's the inference they take. That puts him in the suspect

When the police got this case, of course, he becomes person of interest number one, really as he should, based on the issues with the kiddo and the

paternity and based on him going to meet her. And he, of course, tells them he was in Arlington, he was supposed to meet her, he just didn't. So that puts him in the suspect column.

began -- very early on there's another suspect. Bam.

Hits them. Rises up very quickly. And that is a stalker that Mechelle had been having in the past several months. Mechelle worked -- the victim in this case worked at the 7-Eleven. And working at the 7-Eleven she had picked up a person who had come in there and taken him home to have sex with him at her house, at her apartment, where she was killed. And that person became a stalker and became a person to such an extent that she needed to get a gun to protect herself. And so that became a real suspect for the police to begin to look at, too.

Anything that we talk about in this case, the next couple of weeks, that deals with Mechelle, do not take it as us trying to trash her. Okay? There is no judgment in any -- picking someone up. There is no judgment from that, period, because that's just irrelevant. It's irrelevant if a prostitute or a nun is given. That's irrelevant. But what is relevant is if it creates suspects or if it creates the type of

lifestyle that you need to look at other people to see if it could have been a person that killed her.

Mechelle picked up random guys from the
7-Eleven and she brought them back to her house and she
had sex with them. That is a given and that is a truth
and that is her lifestyle. And the police did zero
investigation into any of these suspects. What you're
going to hear about is the police zeroed in on the
stalker and did what they did to say we eliminate him.
And once they did that, they said we're not turning over
any more stones. We're not looking any deeper. We're
happy with what we got on Thomas. We're happy with the
inferences. No confession. No direct evidence. No
eyewitnesses. Just inferences.

What you're going to hear about is that there was an incomplete, if not incompetent, investigation in this case. And you're going to hear about that for three -- for the next two weeks. The crime happened on March the 20th of 2011 and within a month to two months pretty much all the evidence that you're going to hear in this courtroom was developed. But Thomas Olivas was not arrested in March of 2011. The police allowed him to continue to be free. Thomas wasn't arrested in April of 2011. They allowed him to be free. Thomas wasn't arrested in May, June, July. He

wasn't arrested in August. He wasn't in arrested in September. Thomas wasn't arrested, with the same evidence you're going to hear about, in October 2011. He wasn't arrested in November of 2011. He wasn't arrested in December of 2011.

What you're going to hear about is that it was not until November of 2012 that the police decided we're going to arrest him on the same evidence they'd had for the past year and a half. This case is not beyond a reasonable doubt. They have determined based on inferences that Thomas looks guilty. And maybe he does. Maybe he does. But looking guilty does not make a person guilty.

And so we believe that at the end of this trial you're going to have Thomas supposed to meet with the victim of the crime. No evidence that he ever did. You're going to have Thomas in the vicinity, but no evidence that he was actually there. You'll have evidence that Thomas had some scratches on his body or some marks. You'll have evidence that there was a smell of gasoline in his car. And based on those pieces of evidence, they're going to ask you to find him guilty. And I anticipate that that is going to be the sum total of their case.

And at the conclusion of the evidence and

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

```
after looking at all the different folks that really
could have been involved in this, and maybe we could
make as many inferences against them, I believe that you
will not love your verdict, as you'll want to solve the
case, and everybody does, but I believe that you will
follow the constitution and you will say this case has
just not risen to the evidence of beyond a reasonable
doubt.
        Thank you.
            THE COURT: Y'all approach briefly.
            (Discussion at the bench, off the record)
            THE COURT: All right. You can call and
identify your first witness.
            MS. RAY: Your Honor, we call Toni
Gutierrez.
            (Witness takes the stand)
            THE COURT: All right. Now, state your
full, legal name, please, for the court reporter and
members of the jury.
            THE WITNESS:
                          Toni Gutierrez.
            THE COURT: I need you to face me and raise
your right hand.
            (One witness sworn)
            THE COURT: Have you ever testified before
in district court?
            THE WITNESS: Yes.
```

```
THE COURT: Are you familiar with the rules
1
2
    that apply to all witnesses, where you may and may not
3
    be, who you may and may not talk to?
                 THE WITNESS:
                              Yes.
4
5
                 THE COURT: Those rules apply in this case,
    as they do in most. Just make sure that you follow
6
7
    them.
8
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
9
                 THE COURT:
                             Tamla.
                          Thank you, Your Honor.
10
                 MS. RAY:
11
                          TONI GUTIERREZ,
12
    having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
13
                        DIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MS. RAY:
14
15
       Q.
           Ms. Gutierrez, could you, please, introduce
16
    yourself to the jury and tell them who you work for.
17
       Α.
                   I'm Toni Gutierrez. I work for the City
           Okay.
18
    of Arlington Fire Department, Dispatch Services.
19
       Q.
           And how long have you worked for them?
20
           Thirty-two years.
       Α.
21
       Q.
           And what is your position in that organization?
22
           I am a communication supervisor.
       Α.
23
       Q.
           And how long have you been a communication
24
    supervisor?
25
           For 25 years.
       Α.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

And what job do y'all do with the -- say it Q. That's a long name. Where do you work again? again. The City of Arlington Fire Department, Dispatch Services. Q. What do y'all do? Α. We -- we're the dispatch center. That's where all the emergency calls come in. Q. You stated that you have been the communications supervisor? Α. Yes. Q. What does that entail? I supervise fire dispatchers, police dispatchers, Α. and 9-1-1 operators. And you've held that position for 22 years? Q. Twenty-five. Α. Q. Twenty-five. So if I live within the City of Arlington and I call 9-1-1, it will be your people that I'm talking to? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. When I call 9-1-1, how are calls generated and recorded, generally? They're automatically recorded on a digital audio Α. system. Q. Is there a way for you, or anyone else, to go in

to the system and change a call?

- Α. No, ma'am. 1 2 Q. Even as a supervisor you can't do it? 3 No, ma'am. Α. Do you also hold the role as custodian of 4 Q. records? 5 6 Α. Yes. 7 Q. And what does that mean to be a custodian of 8 records? 9 Custodian of records, I have to ensure that calls 10 are recorded appropriately, anything that comes out of 11 our dispatch center is authenticate, any paperwork that 12 accompanies the audio is from our center, and 13 authenticate, also. 14 About how many call takers do you supervise? Q. 15 On dayshift, because I'm a dayshift supervisor, usually about seven 9-1-1 operators. 16 Q. And do you know -- have you ever supervised nightshift? 19 Α. Yes. 20
- 17 18
 - How many generally are on nightshift? Q.
 - Α. Dayshift, the most about seven right now. The evenings about nine. And nightshift, depending on what day it is, about eight.
 - Q. Are there more days that are busier than others?
- 25 Α. Yes, like Friday or Saturday nights.

22

23

24

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q. And as the custodian of records, is it part of your job to -- you stated that you maintain the audio caller -- calls. Is there also a report that's generated based on calls to 9-1-1? Α. Yes. Q. And if you could, describe what that report looks like or what is -- what the purpose is of that report. Α. It's just a computer-generated printout of the call into our 9-1-1 center. And what sort of information is detailed in that Q. report? It has the date and the time that the call comes in, when the units are dispatched, when they go en route, when they go on scene, and any pertinent information that maybe the 9-1-1 operator obtains, and once it's dispatched, possibly police or fire dispatcher information that they entered into the call. Q. So if someone calls 9-1-1, the information that they relay to the call taker, the call taker can then relay to the appropriate agency, be it fire or police; is that correct? Correct. Because the call comes in and it's on a computer system, so they're entering the information.

As soon as they enter the call, the call will go to the

fire dispatcher and/or the police dispatcher and they

```
1
    immediately have it to dispatch.
2
                 MS. RAY: May I approach the witness, Your
    Honor?
3
                 THE COURT:
                             You may.
4
5
       Q.
            (BY MS. RAY) Ms. Gutierrez, I'm showing you what
6
    has been previously marked as State's Exhibit 1. Are
7
    you familiar with State's Exhibit 1?
8
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
9
       Q.
           Okay. And State's Exhibit 1 is a CD, correct?
10
       Α.
           Yes.
11
       Q.
           And have you listened to the contents of State's
12
    Exhibit 1 prior to your testimony?
       Α.
13
           Yes.
14
           And when did you do that?
       Q.
15
       Α.
           Today.
16
       Q.
           And did you mark it so that you know that it's
    the same CD that you listened to?
17
18
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
19
       Q.
           On March 20th, 2011, did the -- did your dispatch
20
    services receive a call pertaining to an incident at
21
    2216 Presidents Corner Drive?
22
       Α.
           Yes.
           And at what time did y'all receive the call?
23
       Q.
24
       Α.
           The call came in at 10:10 and 52 seconds on March
25
    20, 2011.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Now, the -- State's Exhibit 1, does that contain Q. the call in reference to the incident at -- on March 20th, 2011, at 10:10 and 52 seconds? Α. Yes. ma'am. Does the call depicted on State's Exhibit 1, was Q. it kept in the regular course of business for dispatch services? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. Did an employee or representative of the City of Arlington dispatch services make these records or transmit this information regarding acts, events, conditions, opinions, or diagnosis? Α. Yes. Ω. Was it done at or near the time or reasonably soon after the event? Α. Yes. Did the employee or representative who made the Q. entries have actual knowledge of the events? Α. Yes. Now, the call depicted on State's Exhibit 1, is Q. that an exact duplicate of the call that y'all received on March 20th, 2011? Α. Yes, ma'am. Do you recall how many calls you received Q.

pertaining to the incident at 2216 Presidents Corner?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

There were a couple of calls. Α. Q. And the report we mentioned earlier was a report generated based on the call? Α. Yes. And that report indicates that there were more --Q. there was more than one call? Α. Yes. Does the report indicate what sort of incident Q. this was, whether you needed to dispatch -- or what sort of agency needed to be dispatched? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. What sort of call was it? Α. It was an apartment fire. Q. And do your records indicate at what time you dispatched someone to address the apartment fire? Yes, ma'am. Α. Q. Can we just --THE COURT: She answered your question. You said do the records indicate... She answered yes. Your next question. Q. (BY MS. RAY) And what time do the records reflect that the fire department was dispatched? Α. One alarm assignment was dispatched at 10:11 and 9 seconds. MS. RAY: Your Honor, may I approach the

```
1
    easel?
2
                 THE COURT: You may.
3
                 (Pause in proceedings)
                 THE COURT:
                             Carry on.
4
5
                 MS. RAY:
                          Thank you, Your Honor.
6
       Q.
            (BY MS. RAY)
                          Okay. Ms. Gutierrez, at what time
7
    did y'all receive the first 9-1-1 call pertaining to the
    fire?
8
9
           The first one was answered by the 9-1-1 operator
    at 22:11 and 9 seconds.
10
       Q.
           I'm sorry?
11
           The first call?
12
       Α.
13
       Q.
           Yes.
14
           The 9-1-1 operator received it at 10 -- well,
15
    I -- did I say it in 24-hour increments? I said 22:11
    and 9 seconds, which is 10:11 and 9 seconds. Sorry, I
16
    was using military time.
17
18
       Q.
           No need to apologize.
19
                 And nine seconds?
20
       Α.
           Yes.
21
       Q.
           And that would be p.m.?
22
       Α.
           Yes.
23
       Q.
           And do your records indicate at what time the
24
    first fire truck was dispatched to the location?
25
       Α.
                  They were dispatched at 10:11 and
           Yes.
```

1 23 seconds. 2 Q. And do you know at what time the fire department 3 made the scene of the location? Α. They made the scene at 10:14 and 31 seconds p.m. 4 5 Q. Thirty-one seconds? Α. Yes. 6 7 Q. At some point did another agency, other than the 8 fire department, also get dispatched? Α. 9 Yes.

Q. And at what time -- which agency was it and at what time did it also get dispatched?

10

11

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

- 12 A. The police department was requested. And 10:19
 13 and 20 seconds.
 - Q. Who would have made such a request? Is that something based on another call or would the fire department -- how would it work that an additional request would be made?
 - A. The fire department requested the police department to go block a couple of streets. That's why they were requested initially.
 - Q. Okay. Did -- does it show -- do the records indicate that a subsequent request was made?
 - A. Yes, for the police department. They were requested at 10:34 and 18 seconds. They requested crime scene, police, for a stab victim.

Q. You said 10:34? 1 10:34 and 18 seconds p.m. 2 Α. 3 And do you have -- does your information indicate Q. 4 at what time police arrived to address the crime, the 5 stabbing victim? 6 I do not have -- I just have when they were 7 notified, but I do not have when they got on scene. 8 Q. Okay. Now, Ms. Gutierrez, you mentioned that you have listened to the call that's depicted on State's 9 Exhibit No. 1? 10 11 Α. Yes. 12 Q. Did you recognize the call taker? 13 Α. Yes. Okay. Who was that call taker? 14 Q. 15 It was Patty Worley. Α. 16 Could you spell Patty's last name? Q. W-0-R-L-E-Y. 17 Α. 18 How long has Patty worked for y'all? Q. 19 Α. I don't recall. 20 Q. Okay. 21 Α. And she no longer works for our department. 22 Q. Okay. So you recognized her voice even though 23 she no longer worked for y'all? 24 Α. Yes. At least ten years, but I don't have a

25

definite timeframe.

1	MS. RAY: I pass this witness, Your Honor.
2	MR. MOORE: I just have a few questions.
3	THE COURT: Go ahead.
4	<u>CROSS-EXAMINATION</u>
5	BY MR. MOORE:
6	Q. Ms. Cisernos (sic), how is it recorded what time
7	these telephone calls come in?
8	A. I'm Ms. Gutierrez.
9	Q. Oh, I'm sorry.
10	A. If the question is for me, I'm Toni Gutierrez,
11	and it is a digital audio system.
12	THE COURT: You answer questions. You don't
13	make statements in court.
14	THE WITNESS: Okay.
15	THE COURT: Okay. You can do that after the
16	trial.
17	THE WITNESS: Okay.
18	THE COURT: Next question.
19	Q. (BY MR. MOORE) I'm sorry. I was writing your
20	name down. I got it wrong, for some reason.
21	A. That's all right. Gutierrez.
22	Q. Could you explain that again?
23	A. It's an audio system, digital audio system.
24	Q. Okay. And very accurate?
25	A. Yes.

```
Is it checked and calibrated and made sure that
1
       Q.
2
    that's a correct time that is reflected on the records?
3
       Α.
           Yes.
           Ms. Ray put this 10:11:09 as the first call.
4
5
    What was 22:10:52? Was that the first call that came
    in?
6
7
       Α.
                 I -- the first call that came in was in
           No.
8
    military time 22:11:09, which is --
9
       Q.
           Okay. And that --
10
       Α.
            -- 10:11 and 9 seconds p.m.
                 MR. MOORE: May I approach?
11
                 THE COURT: Yes.
12
13
       Q.
           (BY MR. MOORE) And we're only talking a few
14
    seconds here.
15
       Α.
           I'm sorry, what was that time you gave me?
16
       Q.
           22:10:52.
           Oh, that's when the call initially came in to the
17
       Α.
18
    system.
19
       Q.
           Okay. And we're talking the initial 9-1-1 call?
20
       Α.
           22:10 and 52 seconds is when the system picks up
21
    the call.
22
       Q.
           Right.
           It doesn't mean that that's when the operator
23
       Α.
24
    answered it.
25
       Q.
           Okay. If I'm out there and I picked up 9-1-1 and
```

```
1
    go 9-1-1 --
           Uh-huh. Exactly.
2
       Α.
3
           -- and it rings, that's when that's recorded?
       Q.
4
       Α.
           Yes.
5
           Okay. Not when the operator picks it up but when
       Q.
6
    the call actually connects?
7
       Α.
           They're all recorded. It's all recorded.
8
       Q.
           Okay. So 22:10:52 would have been the exact time
9
    that the 9-1-1 call came in to your place?
10
       Α.
           Correct.
11
       Q.
           Okay. I'm not knit-picking. I'm just --
12
       Α.
           No, that's okay.
13
       Q.
           That's what my records showed.
                 And when it says close 6:08:48, I assume
14
15
    that would mean that's when everybody left the scene,
    all the firefighters?
16
17
       Α.
           That's when the last person told us to close the
18
    call.
19
       Q.
           Okay.
           Yes, sir.
20
       Α.
21
       Q.
           Thank you, ma'am.
22
       Α.
           You're welcome.
23
                 MR. MOORE: That's all.
24
                 THE COURT: Any redirect?
25
                 MS. RAY: Yes, Your Honor.
```

REDIRECT EXAMINATION 1 BY MS. RAY: 2 Q. Ms. Gutierrez? 3 Yes. Α. 4 Just so we understand, at 22:10 -- or at 10:10 5 Q. 6 and 52 seconds, what happened at 10:10 and 52 seconds? 7 That's when the call is placed to 9-1-1 and it's Α. 8 waiting to be answered. And at 10:11:09, that's when that call was 9 Q. answered? 10 11 A. Yes, ma'am. 12 Q. Okay. Ms. Gutierrez, so do I have all this 13 accurate and correct? At 10:10 and 52 the first call comes in as waiting to be answered? 14 15 Α. Yes. And at 10:11:09 the first call is answered; is 16 Q. that correct? 17 18 Yes, ma'am. Α. 19 Q. At 10:11:23 the fire department is dispatched? 20 Α. Yes. 21 Q. At 10:14:31 the fire department is on scene; is that correct? 22 23 Α. Yes, ma'am. At 10:19:20 the police requested -- or police are 24 Q. 25 requested to block the street?

Α. Yes, ma'am. 1 2 Q. And then at 10:34:18 the police crime scene was 3 requested because of a stab victim? Yes. ma'am. Α. 4 Q. And this, of course, is on March 20th, 2011? 5 Yes, ma'am. 6 Α. 7 (Pause in proceedings) 8 Q. (BY MS. RAY) Ms. Gutierrez, the -- you watched 9 me write this information on this chart? 10 Α. Yes, ma'am. 11 And I just marked it as State's Exhibit 165. Q. 12 Α. Okay. And is State's Exhibit 165, the information that 13 Q. I depicted, is this an accurate reflection of what you 14 15 told us, first, regarding the times and dates of calls and the nature of the call? 16 A. Yes, ma'am. 17 18 MS. RAY: Your Honor, I offer State's 19 Exhibit No. 165, after tendering to Defense Counsel for 20 inspection. 21 MR. MOORE: I have no objection. 22 THE COURT: All right. The chart marked as 165 is admitted as offered. 23 24 (State's Exhibit No. 165 admitted) 25 MS. RAY: I pass this witness, Your Honor.

```
MR. MOORE: Just one other question.
1
2
                 THE COURT:
                             Sure.
                        RECROSS-EXAMINATION
3
    BY MR. MOORE:
4
5
           Ms. Gutierrez, according to the -- well,
       Q.
    according to your records that you brought here today,
6
7
    there are some comments out to the side of these times,
8
    correct?
9
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
10
       Q.
           And one of them is -- I lost it. Hang on -- at
    22:13:02?
11
12
       Α.
           Yes.
13
           It says, "Complainant kicked in door. No one is
       Q.
14
    coming out." Does that -- do you see that?
15
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
16
       Q.
           Who -- who puts that information in there?
           The 9-1-1 operator.
17
       Α.
18
           And how does she receive that information?
       Q.
19
       Α.
           It's the complainant talking to her. So
20
    whatever --
21
       Q.
           And not --
22
           -- whatever the person that's calling in is
23
    saying, she'll type in, into the call.
24
       Q.
           Okay. So at 10:13:02 -- I'm confused -- it says,
25
    "Complainant kicked in door." "Complainant" being the
```

```
1
    9-1-1 caller, correct?
2
       Α.
           Yes. Yes, sir.
3
       Q.
           And that -- and was he actually -- or that
    person, that complainant, talking to the 9-1-1 operator?
4
5
       Α.
           I'd have to listen to it again.
       Q.
6
           Okay.
7
           But I'm pretty sure they were. But I'd have to
       Α.
    listen to it. I couldn't answer with certainty.
8
9
       Q.
           Okay. Thank you, ma'am.
           You're welcome.
10
       Α.
11
                THE COURT: Anything else from the State?
12
                MS. RAY: No further questions for this
13
    witness, Your Honor.
14
                THE COURT: May the witness be permanently
    excused by the parties?
15
16
                MR. MOORE:
                             Yes.
                MS. RAY: No objection, Your Honor.
17
18
                THE COURT: All right. Then I'm going to
19
    excuse you from trial. You're not on call.
20
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okay.
21
                THE COURT: And you just need to remember
22
    who you may and may not talk to until you find out the
23
    jury has reached a decision. Thank you for coming in.
                THE WITNESS: Yes. You're welcome.
24
25
                 (Witness excused from courtroom)
```

```
THE COURT: All right. She's going that
1
    way. Why don't y'all go that way. Hit the buzzer when
2
3
    you're ready to start back.
                Everyone, we'll take a five- to ten-minute
4
5
    stretch break. Listen for the jury buzzer. When you
    hear it, return to your stations.
6
7
                Remember your instructions. Now you do have
    something to talk about, just don't.
8
                (Break taken, 11:25 - 11:40 a.m.)
9
10
                (OPEN COURT, DEFENDANT PRESENT, NO JURY)
11
                (Witness on the stand)
12
                THE COURT: What is your full, legal name?
13
                THE WITNESS: Paul Issac -- Paul Issac
14
    Lopez.
15
                THE COURT: Okay. I need you to face me and
16
    raise your right hand.
17
                THE WITNESS: Do you want me to stand up?
18
                THE COURT:
                            Nah.
19
                (One witness sworn)
20
                THE COURT: All right. Have you ever
    testified before?
21
22
                THE WITNESS: Nah.
                                     No, sir.
23
                THE COURT: All right. There's rules you've
24
    got to follow. Rule number one, you can't be in the
25
    courtroom unless you're answering questions. You cannot
```

```
1
    sit in the courtroom and listen to what other people
2
    say.
3
                Do you understand number one?
                THE WITNESS: Yes. sir.
4
5
                THE COURT: All right. Number two, you
6
    cannot talk to other people about what you see or hear
7
    in the courtroom unless you're speaking in private with
8
    the attorneys for either side or their staff, at least
9
    not until the trial is over. You answer questions in
10
    court, you speak in private with the lawyers, or you
11
    don't talk until you hear there's a final decision by
12
    the jury.
13
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
14
                THE COURT: Make sure you hear and
15
    understand the question asked. If you can't hear or
    don't understand, then say so, but never wing it.
16
17
    you do understand the question, answer that question and
18
    stop and wait for the next question. If someone asks:
19
    Do you have a watch? Say yes or no. If they want to
20
    know what time it is, they'll ask that question next.
21
    But don't say yes and it says it's 3:53 or whatever.
22
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                THE COURT:
                           Do you follow the difference?
23
24
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
25
                THE COURT: Her hands have to rest between
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

```
question and answer. It's kind of stilted, not like
normal conversation, but you can learn to talk normal a
couple of days after the trial.
            Do you understand all these instructions?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT: All right. Miss Tamla, is the
State ready to continue?
            MS. RAY: The State is, Your Honor.
            THE COURT: Is the Defense ready to
continue?
            MR. MOORE: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT: All right. Go fetch the
factfinders.
            (Jury seated in courtroom)
            THE COURT: State may call and identify its
next witness.
            MS. RAY: Your Honor, we call Paul Issac
Lopez.
           THE COURT: All right. Mr. Lopez, will you
state your name again for Miss Karen and also for the
jury, please, sir.
            THE WITNESS: Paul Issac. There's a "D"
initial. Paul Issac D. Lopez.
            THE COURT: All right. And I swore you in,
placed you under rules and placed you under oath while
```

```
1
    the jury was on break; is that correct, sir?
2
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                 THE COURT: You understand that carries on
3
4
    until the trial ends; is that right, sir?
5
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                 THE COURT: All right. Tamla, you may
6
7
    proceed.
                 MS. RAY: Thank you, Your Honor.
8
9
                           ISSAC LOPEZ,
10
    having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
11
                         DIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MS. RAY:
12
13
       Q.
           Paul Issac D. Lopez?
           Yes, ma'am.
14
       Α.
15
           And what name do you usually go by?
       Q.
16
           I go by Issac.
       Α.
17
           Do mind if I call you Issac?
       Q.
18
       Α.
           No, ma'am.
19
       Q.
           Issac, so where do you live?
20
           I currently live in Lewisville.
       Α.
21
       Q.
           Are you married?
22
           Yes, I am.
       Α.
23
       Q.
           Who are you married to?
24
       Α.
           Celia Lopez.
25
           How long have you and Celia been married?
       Q.
```

1 Α. About four and a half years. Yeah, four and a half years. 2 And currently y'all live up in Farmers Branch? 3 Q. Lewisville. Α. No. 4 Lewisville. How long have y'all lived up there? 5 Q. Ever since -- after we left the apartment when 6 Α. 7 the incident happened is when we moved over there 8 closer to my job. 9 So -- and you referenced the apartment where the 10 incident happened. Back in March of 2011 where were you living? 11 Α. Presidents Corner. 12 13 Q. And where is Presidents Corner? 14 Α. It's in Arlington. 15 Is that in Tarrant County? Q. 16 Α. Yes, ma'am. 17 Do you recall which apartment you lived in at Q. 18 Presidents Corner? 19 Α. I don't remember the number. 20 Q. Did you live alone? 21 No. Α. 22 And who did you live with back at Presidents Q. 23 Corner?

It was me and my wife.

24

25

Α.

Q.

Celia?

1 Α. Uh-huh. 2 Q. Now, was she your wife back in March of --3 No. Α. -- 2011? Q. 4 5 Α. No. 6 And part of the thing the judge talked to you Q. 7 earlier about, you're -- I know you're a little nervous, 8 but you have to let me finish answering -- asking the 9 question so that Karen can get everything I say before 10 you get started. 11 Α. I'm sorry. 12 Q. No need to apologize. 13 THE COURT: She can't type in stereo. 0n1y 14 one at a time. 15 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. 16 THE COURT: You may continue. 17 Q. (BY MS. RAY) Okay. So at the time you and Celia 18 were dating... 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. 20 Q. Did Celia also live full-time with you or did she 21 have another apartment? 22 Α. She had another apartment. 23 Q. How close was she living to you? 24 Α. Right across the street. 25 So were y'all pretty serious back then? Q.

- 1 Α. Yeah. You kind of locked that down? 2 Q. 3 Yes, I was. Α. So do you and Celia have children? Ω. 4 5 Α. Yes, we do. How many children do y'all have? Q. 6 7 We have one together. Α. 8 Q. Do y'all have children from prior relationships? 9 Α. Yes. 10 Q. So in total, between the two of y'all, how many 11 children do y'all have? 12 Α. Three. 13 Do those kids live with y'all pretty regularly? Q. 14 No. Α. Okay. So who lived with y'all full-time? 15 Q. 16 Α. Her son and my -- the daughter we have together. 17 Q. And you have another daughter from another --18 Α. Yes, I do. 19 Q. But she's still a part -- does she still live 20 with y'all from time to time, spend weekends? 21 Α. Yeah.
- Q. Back in March of 2011, where were you working?
- A. I was working at Meineke and Lowe's.
- Q. Do you still work at both of those places?
- 25 A. I do not.

- Q. Where do you work now?
- A. I worked at -- it's a place called Alliance Dyno in Keller.
 - Q. What kind of -- I didn't understand that.
 - A. Alliance Dyno in Keller.
 - Q. Okay. What kind of work did you do for Meineke?
- 7 A. I was a manager at the time.
 - Q. And how about Lowe's?
 - A. I was just -- I unloaded trucks.
- Q. So you stated that even though Celia's apartment was pretty close to yours, y'all spent most of your time together in your apartment?
- 13 A. Yes, ma'am.

4

5

6

8

- Q. How long did you live over at Presidents Corner
 throughout -- how long did you live there in total?
- 16 A. I don't remember.
- Q. Was it a lengthy amount of time, like several years or...
- 19 A. No, ma'am.
- Q. Less than a year?
- 21 A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. At some point did you meet a young lady by the name of Mechelle Gandy?
- A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. And how did you meet Mechelle?

She moved in next door to me. 1 Α. 2 Q. Did she move in by herself? 3 I do believe, yes, ma'am. Α. Q. Okay. Did anyone live with Mechelle? 4 5 She had a little boy. Α. Q. Did you know her little boy's name? 6 7 Ashton or something like that. Α. 8 Q. It was Ashton or something like that? 9 Α. Yeah. 10 Q. Do you recall how old the little boy was? 11 He was -- at the time of the move-in, he was --Α. 12 he wasn't one yet. 13 Q. Did he turn one soon after they moved in? I don't remember when she moved in. 14 Α. 15 Q. Do you recall, was there ever a birthday party or celebration for Asher? 16 17 Α. Yes, there was. 18 Did you -- how did you find out about that Q. 19 birthday party? 20 Α. She gave us bags of candy after the birthday 21 party, for my kids. She gave it to my wife. And "she" being Mechelle? 22 Q. 23 Α. Yes, ma'am. 24 Was she pretty particular about how you said her Q.

25

name?

- A. Yeah. It's Mechelle, I do believe.Q. What happened if you called her Michelle?
 - A. She corrected you. She would correct real quick.
 - Q. Okay. Was she pretty sassy?
- A. A little bit.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

15

16

17

18

22

23

24

- Q. Okay. You stated that you knew about the baby's birthday because Mechelle came by and brought you and your children -- brought gift bags for your children?
- A. Yes, ma'am.
- 10 Q. And do you recall how long she had lived in the 11 apartment --
- 12 A. I do not.
- 13 Q. -- when that happened?
- 14 A. I do not.
 - Q. Was she -- would it be fair to say -- did she live there a long time or did she live there less than y'all did?
 - A. She lived there less than us.
- Q. If you could, explain to the jury how did
 y'all's -- how were your apartments related? Was your
 apartment next to hers? On top of hers?
 - A. We lived next door, downstairs.
 - Q. The apartments -- if you could, describe how the apartments themselves were laid out. Were there -- was it a two-story apartment, or how did that work out?

- 1 Α. No. I lived in a one-bedroom. You lived in a one-bedroom? 2 Q. 3 Uh-huh. Α. Q. And was there an apartment directly above yours? 4 Yes. 5 Α. 6 Q.
- Q. And then Mechelle's apartment was next to yours?
- 7 A. Yes, ma'am.
- 8 Q. Did y'all share a walkway or a sidewalk?
 - A. A porch, yeah.
- 10 Q. You shared a porch?
- 11 A. Yeah.

- 12 Q. How would you describe Mechelle? Was she pretty
 13 friendly?
- A. Yeah. She never -- I mean she never not passed
 me and didn't say hi.
- 16 Q. Did you really get to know her particularly well?
- A. No, not really. It was just kind of hi/bye kind of thing.
- 19 Q. Were you working a lot at that time?
- 20 A. Yeah.
- 21 Q. Trying to impress Celia?
- 22 A. I guess. Yeah, I guess you could say.
- Q. Okay. I want to call your attention to March 24 20th, 2011. You refreshed it -- you referenced it
- 25 earlier as the incident?

- Α. Yes, ma'am. 1 Do you recall much about that evening? 2 Q. 3 Yes, a little bit. Α. Q. Were you working that day? 4 Yes, I was. 5 Α. 6 Q. Do you recall about what time you would have 7 gotten off of work? 8 Α. Around 9:00. 9 Q. Did you -- how did you get home? 10 Α. Celia came and picked me up. 11 Q. About what time do you recall getting to the 12 apartment? 13 Α. Around probably like 9:15. At the time who would have been -- in terms of 14 Ω. 15 the children, who was staying with y'all then? 16 Α. My son Julian -- or her son Julian. Her son Julian. 17 Q. 18 Was your daughter there with you that 19 weekend or that day, do you recall? 20 Α. No, ma'am. When you got home around 9:15, do you recall what 21 Q.
- A. Yes, ma'am.

you did?

- Q. What did you do?
- 25 A. I started up a grill to cook fajitas that I had

- out all day long. And they needed to be cooked so I was going to cook them.

 Q. So you had some fajitas waiting for you?

 A. Uh-huh, to be cooked, yes, ma'am.

 Q. And at 9:15 you fired up the grill?
 - A. Yes, ma'am.

7

8

9

10

15

16

Q. Do you recall where you were going to cook the fajitas, in terms of inside versus outside?

So the porch between your apartment and

- A. In front, on the sidewalk, by the porch.
- 11 Mechelle's apartment is where you were going to grill?
- 12 A. Yes, ma'am.

Q.

- 13 Q. And did you do that?
- 14 A. Yes, ma'am.
 - Q. While you were grilling, do you recall -- did you see Mechelle?
- 17 A. No, ma'am.
- 18 Q. Did you have any reason to believe she was home?
- A. No, ma'am -- at least I -- well, her -- the car was outside.
- 21 Q. Mechelle's car was there?
- 22 A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. Generally speaking, if Mechelle's car was there, did it mean she was there?
- 25 A. I would assume.

1 Q. Do you recall what Celia was doing around that time? 2 3 Α. She was doing laundry. So what was y'all's arrangement, would she bring Q. 4 5 her laundry to your place or would she do laundry at her 6 place --7 Α. She was --8 Q. -- or bring it back to you? 9 Α. She was getting all her stuff and moving it to my 10 apartment, clothes-wise, because, you know, slowly a 11 step forward for us. And she went and did laundry at 12 her house. She had the washer and dryer at her house. 13 And then she came and was doing laundry, folding it and 14 stuff at my house. 15 Q. So, again, you were trying to lock that down 16 and --Yes, ma'am. 17 Α. 18 Q. -- have her move in? 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. 20 You knew you had a good woman and you didn't want Q. her to get away? 21 22 Α. Uh-huh. So while you were grilling, did anything out of 23 Q. 24 the ordinary happen? Did you notice anything unusual? 25 Α. No.

At some point did you see anyone coming and going 1 Q. 2 outside of the -- around the apartments? 3 Α. Yes. Q. Tell us about that. 4 5 I was grilling, facing my apartment, and I seen Α. somebody walk out of the breezeway into the street. 6 7 MS. RAY: Your Honor, may I approach the 8 witness? 9 THE COURT: Yes. 10 Q. (BY MS. RAY) Issac, I am showing you what has 11 been previously marked as State's Exhibit No. 2. Are you familiar with State's Exhibit No. 2? 12 13 Α. Yes, ma'am. And State's Exhibit No. 2, does it appear to be a 14 Q. 15 blowup depicting the area surrounding your -- the apartment? 16 Yes, ma'am. 17 Α. 18 Q. The Presidents Corner Apartments? 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. 20 Q. And does State's Exhibit No. 2 appear to be a 21 fair and accurate depiction of an aerial view of the 22 apartment complex? Yes, ma'am. 23 Α. MS. RAY: Your Honor, I offer State's 24 25 Exhibit 2, after tendering to Defense Counsel for

1	inspection.
2	MR. MOORE: I have no objection, Your Honor.
3	MS. RAY: And I'll tender it to the Court.
4	THE COURT: I can see it. Thank you.
5	Two is admitted, State's 2.
6	(State's Exhibit No. 2 admitted)
7	MS. RAY: And, Your Honor, permission to
8	publish State's 2 and have Mr. Lopez point out step
9	down and point out
10	THE WITNESS: Where do you want me?
11	MS. RAY: Right here in front of where
12	THE COURT: In front of the PowerPoint.
13	Yeah, Mr. Moore, you can move.
14	No, no, no. Set it right in front of the
15	PowerPoint projector.
16	(Pause in proceedings)
17	THE COURT: You may continue, Counsel.
18	MS. RAY: Thank you, Your Honor.
19	Q. (BY MS. RAY) Issac, I'm handing you the laser
20	pointer. Do you know how that works?
21	A. Yeah.
22	Q. Push the yellow button?
23	A. Yeah.
24	Q. Okay. On State's Exhibit 2, could you indicate
25	where your apartment was at Presidents Corner?

```
Right there.
1
       Α.
           So on State's Exhibit No. 2 there's a -- there
2
       Q.
3
    appears to be a white truck right there. Is that the
4
    approximate location where your apartment was back then?
5
       Α.
           Yes.
                MR. MOORE: I'm sorry, Judge. I could not
6
7
    see that.
8
                THE COURT: Designate again.
9
                All right. For the record, you're pointing
10
    almost in the dead center of the picture; is that right,
11
    sir?
12
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
13
                THE COURT: All right. Members of the jury,
14
    what I say isn't where it is. You decide where it is,
    but Karen can't write down where a red dot is on the
15
    chart.
16
17
                Does everyone understand that?
18
                SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.
19
                THE COURT: You may continue.
20
       Q.
           (BY MS. RAY) So on State's Exhibit 2 you're
21
    pointing out the location directly -- pretty much in the
22
    center where you can see a white truck?
23
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
24
       Q.
           And that is where your apartment was located?
25
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
```

And Mechelle's apartment, would you have been 1 Q. 2 just on that same porch? 3 Yes, ma'am. Α. On State's Exhibit 2, if you could, indicate Ω. 4 where you were when you were grilling your fajitas? 5 6 Right around this area. Right here on the porch. Α. 7 Right here. 8 Q. So, again, on State's Exhibit 2, it would have 9 been the area right around where that white truck is? 10 Α. Yes. ma'am. 11 Q. Now, to be fair, this white -- this photo was not 12 taken -- this is -- that photo was not taken --13 Α. Right. -- the day of, correct? 14 Q. 15 I don't know that truck. Α. Yeah. 16 So that truck -- white truck was not there when Q. 17 you were grilling? 18 Α. No, ma'am. 19 Q. But it's a very convenient location to help us 20 point out certain --21 Α. Yes, ma'am. 22 -- parts of your testimony? Q. 23 Α. Yes, ma'am. 24 And so at one point you stated, before I Q. 25 interrupted you, that while you were grilling fajitas

- that you saw a figure, an individual? Yes, ma'am. Α. Q. And where did you see that person? Α. Right around here. There's a breezeway right I saw him walk this way into the street, this here. way. Okay. So that we understand, the complex where Q. you were, where your apartment was, where that white truck is, there is a breezeway in between two of the buildings. There's a building that appears to be slightly south of where your apartment was, correct? Yes, ma'am. Α. And there's a breezeway in between those two Q. buildings? Yes, ma'am. Α. What is that area behind your apartment complex Q. and that breezeway? What sort of -- is it a forest, or can you characterize what it's --Α. Pretty much. It's -- there's nothing but thorns back there and -- I can tell you that. Pretty --Q. Α. Yes. Q. -- rough stuff back there?
- 21

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

- 23
- 24 My kids kick the ball over there and I had to go Α. 25 get it and, yeah, there's thorns back there.

Q. Next time will you just leave the ball back 1 there? 2 3 Α. Pretty much. So what is back there in terms of the apartment, Q. 4 5 do y'all have backyards or how is -- what does your 6 backyard look like in the apartment? 7 It's just a small patio. Α. 8 Q. And from that breezeway could you get to 9 Mechelle's backyard? 10 Α. It's fenced. It -- everything is fenced. There's a fence back there? 11 Q. It's -- it's -- yeah, it's fenced off. 12 Α. Yeah. 13 And how would you have access to Mechelle's Q. backyard? 14 15 Α. I don't remember. 16 Okay. You don't recall? Q. I don't recall. 17 Α. 18 Do you recall a gate or a fence being broken? Q. 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. 20 Q. And where was that? 21 Α. It's not in the picture. But even before she 22 moved in, it was broke. And where else in that State's Exhibit 2 would 23 Q. 24 that fence have been? 25 If you walk in the breezeway right here, I'm

```
1
    saying maybe right around here.
2
       Q.
           And that would give you -- gain you access into
3
    Mechelle's backyard?
       Α.
           At the time, yeah, because it was broken.
4
5
       Q.
           Okay. What about your backyard, how would you
6
    get to your backyard?
7
           My backyard is sealed off. It's -- it's --
       Α.
8
    it's -- it's just a fence. There's no gate or anything.
9
       Q.
           So did y'all -- in order to have access to your
10
    backyard, you would have to go through your apartment?
11
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
12
       Q.
           Okay. But hers you could have access through the
13
    outside --
14
       Α.
           Yes.
15
       Q.
           -- because the gate was broken?
16
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
           The figure that you saw, could you get any sort
17
       Q.
    of -- how close would you say you got to that person?
18
19
       Α.
           I was -- can I?
20
       Q.
           Yes, you can point to it.
21
       Α.
           I was sitting -- I was probably sitting around
22
    this area right here.
23
       Q.
           Where the white truck is?
24
           Yes. Maybe in between these two right here. And
       Α.
```

I seen the figure right around here, come out of the

1 breezeway. So from there to there. And did you say anything to this person? 2 Q. 3 No, ma'am. Α. 4 Q. Did that person say anything to you? 5 Α. No, ma'am. 6 Were you able to tell whether that you were -- it Q. 7 was a male or a female? 8 Α. No, ma'am. 9 What sort of -- what time of the evening would this have been? 10 11 Maybe around, I don't know, 10:00ish or something. I don't know. 12 Q. 13 So --Maybe 9:00. I don't know. I couldn't tell you 14 Α. 15 an exact time. 16 Was it getting pretty late? Q. Yes. 17 Α. 18 Q. Was it dark out there? 19 Α. Yes. 20 Was there any sort of lighting or anything to Q. 21 help you see who that person could have been? 22 Α. No, ma'am. 23 Q. Were you able to see race or ethnicity? 24 Α. No, ma'am. 25 Q. So based on where you were standing and the

```
1
    lighting, it was pretty hard for you to see anything
    other than a human being?
2
3
           Just a figure.
       Α.
       Ω.
           Figure?
4
5
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
6
       Q.
           Do you recall anything about the -- how that
7
    figure was dressed?
8
       Α.
           No, ma'am. I don't remember.
9
                 THE COURT: Are you still using the diagram
10
    for your examination?
11
                 MS. RAY:
                           No.
12
                 Why don't you go ahead and have a seat.
13
    Thank you.
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, ma'am.
14
15
                 (Pause in proceedings)
16
                 THE COURT: You may continue.
                           Thank you, Your Honor.
17
                 MS. RAY:
18
       Q.
            (BY MS. RAY) Issac, at some point did you start
19
    to notice something out of the ordinary?
20
       Α.
           Yeah -- after I seen the figure?
21
       Q.
           Yes, sir.
22
       Α.
           Yes.
23
       Q.
           What did you notice?
       Α.
24
           Shortly after I seen the figure, I seen a glow
25
    on -- like a reflection, an orange reflection, like
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

```
pretty much it was lit up on the other building, like
the reflection off of the other building.
            MS. RAY: And may I approach the witness,
Your Honor?
            THE COURT: You may.
   Q.
       (BY MS. RAY) Issac, without stepping down, when
you talk about -- on State's Exhibit 2 when you say a
reflection on the other building, where on State's
Exhibit 2 are you talking? Here's the laser pointer.
   Α.
       My eyes aren't really -- actually --
   Q.
       Do you need to step closer to it to see it?
   Α.
       That's the white truck right there, correct?
      That I said earlier, yeah. Right here off of
Okay.
this other building right here, on that side of the
wall, just right on the other side, right there.
   Q.
       So that building on the other side of the
breezeway you talked about earlier?
   Α.
             The reflection -- I just -- I was standing,
       Yes.
facing my building, facing my door, and I looked to the
left and then that's when I seen the reflection.
   Q.
       Did you smell anything?
   Α.
       It smelled like burnt clothes to me.
   Q.
       So you thought someone was burning some clothes?
   Α.
       I didn't know what was going on.
```

What did you do after that?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

- I went to my -- through my house to my patio and Α. looked over and seen -- looked over the fence and seen flames coming from the apartment. Q. Could you tell from what area of the apartment those flames were coming from? Α. The back window. It wasn't the patio window. Ιt was the other window. Q. Did you know where that back room led to, like whose window that was? Α. The baby room. So you knew enough about the layout of the Q. apartment to know that that was the baby's room? Α. Yes, ma'am. What did you do after you saw the flames coming Q. from the baby's room? My wife, or Celia, she was -- wherever my --Α.
- where the back patio sliding door is, if you're facing it and you turn to the left, my closet is right there. So she was in there hanging up clothes. So I come in directly and I said, "Hey, call 9-1-1. Call 9-1-1." And so she did.
 - Q. While Celia is calling 9-1-1, what did you do?
- Α. I went and was banging on the door and hollering, made -- just, "Is anybody in there?" "Anybody in there," to the front door. And then I went to the front

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

```
window and tried looking in it and it was hot.
                                                 The
window was hot. And I was -- I still tried to bang on
the window, and nothing.
            MS. RAY: Your Honor, may I approach the
witness?
            THE COURT: You may.
       (BY MS. RAY) Issac, I'm showing you what has
   Q.
previously been marked as State's Exhibit 9 and State's
Exhibit 13.
            State's Exhibit 9, does it appear to be a
photograph of the apartment complex?
   Α.
       Yes, ma'am.
       And State's Exhibit 13, the same, does it appear
   Q.
to be a photograph of the apartment complex?
       Yes, ma'am.
   Α.
       And State's Exhibit 9, is it a fair and accurate
   Q.
depiction of a part of the apartment where you -- when
vou talked about the window --
   Α.
       Yes, ma'am.
   Q.
       -- and that sort of thing?
   Α.
       That's the window, yes, ma'am.
       Okay. So State's Exhibit 9 is a fair and
   Q.
accurate depiction of the apartment?
   Α.
       The window, yes, ma'am.
```

Okay. And State's Exhibit 13, is it a fair and

```
1
    accurate depiction of the apartment in terms of the
2
    doors, the front doors?
3
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
                MS. RAY: Your Honor, I offer State's
4
5
    Exhibit 9 and 13, after tendering to Defense Counsel for
6
    inspection.
7
                MR. MOORE: We have no objection.
8
                MS. RAY:
                          Tender to the Court.
9
                THE COURT: All right. State's 9, State's
10
    13, each admitted.
11
                (State's Exhibit No. 9 and 13 admitted)
12
                MS. RAY: And, Your Honor, permission to --
13
                THE COURT: Hold on. Let her --
14
                MS. RAY:
                         Oh, sorry.
15
                THE COURT: To?
                                  Permission to?
16
                MS. RAY: Your Honor, permission to publish
    via the ELMO?
17
18
                THE COURT: Technically speaking, ELMO or
19
    PowerPoint of a computer-generated image are the same
20
    thing. Are you going to just use the ELMO and put it on
21
    the ELMO, or are you using it through the PowerPoint
22
    projector?
                Because people interchange those.
23
                MS. RAY:
                         I'm putting it on the ELMO.
24
                THE COURT:
                            Perfect.
25
                The overhead projector, you're using the
```

```
1
    actual exhibit that has been admitted in court, not a
    reproduction thereof.
2
3
                 You may continue -- off the record.
                 (Discussion off the record)
4
5
       Q.
            (BY MS. RAY) Issac, if you could, on State's
6
    Exhibit 9 that is now published on the ELMO right where
7
    the jury can see, can you, please, indicate where --
8
    which window you're talking about in terms that you were
9
    banging on.
10
       Α.
           This one right here.
11
       Q.
           Okay. So it's the window that's pretty much dead
    in the center of State's Exhibit 9?
12
13
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
           And earlier you talked about seeing -- you talked
14
       Q.
15
    about a breezeway?
16
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
17
           Can you now see the breezeway better in State's
       Q.
18
    Exhibit 9?
19
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
20
           What breezeway are you talking about?
       Q.
21
       Α.
           Right here.
22
           So in State's Exhibit 9 pretty much in the center
       Q.
    between those two buildings?
23
24
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
```

And from that breezeway you can have access to

25

Q.

3

4

5

8

9

10

11

17

20

21

24

25

Q.

Α.

Yes, ma'am.

Mechelle's backyard? Yes, ma'am. 2 Α. Q. And on State's Exhibit 9 can you indicate where you first saw that -- where that figure was when you saw him, or her? Right around here. 6 Α. 7 And on State's Exhibit 9 can you point to -- when Q. you pointed to where that figure was, you pointed to that breezeway, correct? Yes, ma'am. Α. Q. About the middle tree in the breezeway? 12 Right -- maybe right there. That tree right Α. 13 there, maybe. And on State's Exhibit 9 you can see four trees, 14 Q. would that be fair to say, four trunks? 15 16 Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. So it would be -- if we're counting from left to 18 right, it would be that second tree? 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. Okay. Where about on State's Exhibit 9 were you Q. standing when you first saw that figure? 22 Like right around -- right on the other side of Α. the fire truck. 23

On the other side of the fire truck?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Yes, ma'am.

Α.

And, obviously, that fire truck was not there Q. when you saw that figure; is that right? Yes, ma'am. Α. Q. Now, on State's Exhibit 13 -- let me bring it closer to you so you can see it. Would you, please, indicate on State's Exhibit 13 where the door to your apartment is. Α. Right here. Q. And earlier you stated you didn't remember what apartment it is? Α. Uh-huh. Q. Now it appears that it's Apartment 603? Yes, ma'am. Α. Okay. And where was Mechelle's apartment? Q. Α. Right there. Okay. And was -- when you were knocking on the Q. door, which door were you knocking on? Α. This one right here. Q. Now, as you're knocking on the door, would it be fair to say were you knocking on it, or were you banging on it? Α. I was beating on the door. Q. Were you concerned that Mechelle and the baby were still in that apartment?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

Α.

No.

Q. Did you at any time see any smoke or anything coming from that door? Α. I don't recall. Q. Okay. Did you just continue to bang on it or did you do anything else? Α. I kicked in the door. Q. You kicked in the door? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. Why did you kick in that door? It was just a reaction. I don't know. something I felt like I had to do, if I could do something. I don't know. Q. On State's Exhibit 13 we can see a little bit of a white vehicle parked in front of those apartments. Whose vehicle is that? Α. It appears to be Mechelle's. After you kicked in that door, what happened? Q. Α. The smoke covered my face and just smoke came gushing out the door. Q. Did you try to run into the apartment? Α. No. I was choking. Did you see anybody? Q. Α. No.

> KAREN B. SMITH OFFICIAL COURT REPORTER

Could you hear anybody?

Q. After the -- you kicked in the door and smoke rolls out, what did you have to do next?

A. We went -- me and my wife, we went to bang on

everybody's door to get to -- to see if anybody was

home, to get them out of the apartments around us.

- Q. Okay. So y'all checked on the -- your upstairs neighbors?
 - A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. Did y'all -- was there anyone in those upstairs apartments?
- 11 A. Yes.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

- 12 Q. Did you -- so you got them out?
- 13 A. Yes, ma'am.
- 14 Q. At some point did help arrive, people from 9-1-1?
- 15 A. Yes, ma'am.
- 16 Q. Who arrived?
- 17 A. The fire department.
- Q. Did y'all have to do anything in terms of moving your cars or anything when the fire department arrived?
- 20 A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. What did y'all do?
- A. I moved my car from the front, my parking -- or
 the parking spot that I was in and I just backed the car
 up as fast as I could.
- Q. Why did you do that?

```
A. Because my wife had an incident where she -- with another fire, or whatever, when she was young and her dad was trying to get the car out, so she told me to get the car because if not, it's going to be -- it's going to be closed off and nobody will allow us to get the vehicle. So she said, "Hurry up and move the vehicle," so I did.
```

- Q. So y'all moved your cars out of the way so that when the first responders come, y'all would be out of the way?
 - A. Yes, ma'am. Yes, ma'am.
- 12 Q. Did you -- were you there when the police -- when 13 the firefighters arrived?
 - A. Yes, ma'am.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

14

19

22

23

- 15 Q. Okay. What did you see?
- 16 A. I seen a lot of people moving.
- 17 Q. Did you ever see Mechelle?
- 18 A. Yes, I did.
 - Q. What did you see happen with Mechelle?
- A. They pulled her out of the apartment and started CPR on her.
 - Q. Did you -- when they pulled her out of the apartment, did you see where they laid her down?
 - A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. Where did they lay her?

Right next to her car. 1 Α. You said you saw them doing CPR? 2 Q. 3 Yes, ma'am. Α. Ο. How long did you -- how long did they do --4 I don't --5 Α. -- CPR on her? 6 Q. 7 Α. I don't recall. 8 Q. Do you recall how Mechelle was dressed? 9 Α. Yes, ma'am. 10 Q. What was Mechelle wearing? She was only in underwear. 11 Α. 12 Q. And when we're talking about underwear, we're 13 talking about panties? Yes, ma'am. 14 Α. 15 Q. So did she have any top on? 16 Α. No, ma'am. And you watched them do the CPR on her? 17 Q. 18 Α. Yes, ma'am. 19 Q. Were you there when they stopped performing CPR on Mechelle? 20 21 Α. Yes, ma'am. 22 Q. Did you know what that meant? 23 Α. Pretty much. 24 What about the baby, did you see or hear anything Q.

about the baby while they were working on Mechelle?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
I know we -- me and my wife, we kept asking the
  Α.
fire department about the baby. My wife was crying.
She was like the baby is -- "Did y'all find the baby?"
"Did y'all find the baby?" And nobody would answer us.
So we didn't know. It was just something that -- we
just had to wait until somebody said something so...
            And we still -- we never did find out that
night if they found...
  Q.
       I'm sorry?
       We never found out if they did or didn't that
  Α.
night.
  Q.
       So how long did y'all hang around the scene that
night before y'all left?
       I don't recall what time it was. It was pretty
late that night.
      Y'all stayed there pretty late. And when y'all
  Q.
left the scene they still hadn't found the baby?
  Α.
       Correct. Or they -- no, nobody told us anything.
  Q.
       Did you ever see them bring the baby out?
  Α.
       No, ma'am.
  Q.
       Do you recall the last time it was before you --
the last time you saw Mechelle before that fire?
  Α.
       I don't remember.
   Q.
       Did you ever see her there without her baby?
       No, ma'am.
   Α.
```

```
1
                 MS. RAY: I'll pass this witness, Your
2
    Honor.
3
                 THE COURT: Defense may cross.
                 MR. MOORE:
                             Thank you.
4
5
                         CROSS-EXAMINATION
    BY MR. MOORE:
6
7
       Q.
           Good afternoon, Mr. Lopez.
8
                 As I understand it, you lived in that
9
    apartment at Presidents Corner before Mechelle Gandy
10
    moved in, correct?
11
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
12
       Q.
           And you didn't know her real well, correct?
           No, sir.
13
       Α.
           Didn't socialize with her?
14
       Q.
15
       Α.
           No, sir.
16
       Q.
           You work during the day, correct?
           Yes, sir.
17
       Α.
18
       Q.
           She worked at night. Is that your understanding?
19
       Α.
           I don't recall.
20
       Q.
           Okay. But regardless, you -- you didn't know
21
    anything about her private life?
22
       Α.
           No, ma'am -- I mean -- no, sir. Sorry.
23
       Q.
           Okay. You just know that you lived in an
24
    apartment adjacent to her?
25
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
```

```
Meaning your apartment shared a common wall with
1
       Q.
2
    her, correct?
3
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
       Ω.
           You could hear between the apartments, like most
4
    apartments, couldn't you?
5
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
6
7
       Q.
           On March 20th of 2011 --
8
                 MR. MOORE:
                             May I use the easel, Your Honor?
9
                 THE COURT: Yes.
                                    Do you need it with the
10
    diagram?
              Which easel do you need, the write-on easel or
11
    the --
                 MR. MOORE: I need the -- I need the
12
13
    write-on.
14
                 THE COURT: All right.
                 (Pause in proceedings)
15
            (BY MR. MOORE) I believe you testified, the best
16
       Q.
17
    of your memory, on March 20th of 2011 you were working
18
    at Lowe's, correct?
19
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
20
           What Lowe's were you working at?
       Q.
21
       Α.
           Off of Eastchase in Fort Worth, I guess.
22
       Q.
           Okay. And your shift was over at 9:00 p.m.,
23
    correct?
24
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
25
           And is that when Celia picked you up?
       Q.
```

- Α. Yes, sir. 1 2 Q. Y'all drove straight home? 3 Α. Yes, sir. Q. Straight to your apartment in Arlington? 4 5 Α. Yes, sir. Q. How long does that take? 6 7 I would guess around 15 minutes, 10, 15 minutes. Α. 8 Q. Okay. Because you've testified that you were 9 home at 9:15, correct? 10 Α. Yes, sir. Around 9:15 or so. 11 Okay. And when you get to your apartment there Q. at the Presidents Corner, it's light -- I mean -- it's 12 13 night and not light outside, correct? Α. 14 Uh-huh. You don't see Mechelle Gandy when you come home? 15 Q. 16 Α. No. 17 You don't hear anything coming from her Q. 18 apartment? 19 Α. No, sir. 20 You don't see any smoke coming out of her Q. 21 apartment at that point in time? 22 Α. No, sir.
- Q. It was just dark over there, correct?
- 24 A. Yes, sir.
- Q. So you start cooking fajitas, because it's late

```
1
    and y'all are hungry, I would imagine, correct?
           And they'd been sitting out all day, yes, sir.
2
3
       Q.
           And so at 9:15 you arrive home and fire up the
    grill, correct?
4
5
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
6
       Q.
           Let me show you what's been marked for
7
    identification purposes as Defendant's Exhibits 1, 2 and
8
    3, and ask you if you recognize what's depicted in those
9
    pictures.
10
       Α.
           What do you mean?
11
       Q.
           Well, that's your apartment that you lived in,
12
    correct?
13
       Α.
           Yes.
14
           Okay. In 1, 2 and 3?
       Q.
15
       Α.
           Yes.
16
       Q.
           And those truly and accurately depict the
17
    apartment as -- when you lived in it?
18
       Α.
           Yes.
                 MR. MOORE: Okay. We'd offer Defendant's
19
20
    Exhibit No. 1, 2 and 3.
21
                 MS. RAY:
                           No objection.
22
                 THE COURT:
                             Defendant's Exhibit No. 1, 2 and
23
    3 are each admitted.
24
                 (Defendant's Exhibit No. 1 - 3 admitted)
25
            (BY MR. MOORE) Well, let me start off with --
       Q.
```

```
(Pause in proceedings)
1
2
                 THE COURT: Then carry on.
3
                 MR. MOORE: Can y'all see that okay?
                 SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS:
                                         Yes.
4
5
                 (Pause in proceedings)
            (BY MR. MOORE) Well, looking at Defendant's
       Q.
6
7
    Exhibit No. 3, that would represent the front of the
    apartment where you lived, correct?
8
9
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
10
       Q.
           And you were out cooking in front of there at
11
    9:15 on March 20th of 2011 and I believe you were about
    where that white truck is?
12
13
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
           Would that -- and what were you doing out there?
14
       Q.
15
           I was my -- me and my son were out there.
16
    were cooking.
17
       Q.
           Okay. And you were out there the whole time
18
    that -- cooking, right?
           Yes, sir, pretty much.
19
       Α.
20
       Q.
           You never went inside?
21
       Α.
           Not that I remember.
22
           Well, do you remember after this incident
       Q.
23
    happened, you went down and talked to Detective Stewart?
24
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
25
           And that would have been on March 24th of 2011,
       Q.
```

```
around 6:00 o'clock in the afternoon. Do you remember
1
2
    that?
3
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
       Q.
           Do you remember going and talking to him?
4
           Uh-huh.
5
       Α.
6
           Do you remember telling him that you stayed out
       Q.
7
    there in front cooking from about 9:15 until you started
8
    seeing smoke?
9
           I don't remember what time I told him, but if
10
    that's what I said, then -- I don't remember.
11
       Q.
           You'd agree with that?
12
       Α.
           Sure. Yeah.
13
           That you were out there the whole time?
       Q.
       Α.
           Uh-huh.
14
15
           Yes? Is that --
       Q.
16
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
17
       Q.
           Okay.
18
                 THE COURT: She can't write down uh-huh,
19
    huh-uh.
20
                 THE WITNESS:
                               Sorry.
21
                 THE COURT: You've got to use words.
22
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
23
       Q.
           (BY MR. MOORE) And I believe you -- when you
24
    were talking to Detective Stewart, to get some time
25
    references, you had received some text messages from a
```

```
1
    coworker, hadn't you?
           Yes, sir.
2
       Α.
3
       Q.
           And one of those text messages was at 9:35 p.m.,
    because you showed him your phone, do you remember that?
4
5
       Α.
           I -- yes.
           So at 9:35, that was your first text from your
6
       Q.
7
    coworker, right?
8
       Α.
           I do believe, yes, sir.
9
       Q.
           He was wanting to know -- or something about if
10
    you were going to work the next day?
11
           I don't remember what it -- I don't remember what
12
    the text message was.
13
       Q.
           Okay. Do you remember telling Detective Stewart
14
    when you talked to him that day that that's what he
    wanted, was to see if you were going to work the next
15
16
    day?
17
           I remember the -- I remember saying something
18
    about the text messages, but I don't remember what was
19
    said.
20
           Okay. And then, also, to kind of get this all
       Q.
21
    in a time context, you showed him your phone again and
22
    you received another text message from him at 9:46 p.m.,
23
    correct?
24
       A. Yes, sir.
```

Q.

Okay. And you're still outside during this time

```
1
    watching the fire and playing with your son?
           Yes, sir.
2
       Α.
3
       Q.
           And still you had heard nothing coming from
    Mechelle Gandy's apartment?
4
5
       Α.
           No, sir.
6
       Q.
           Didn't hear any scuffling or fighting or
7
    anything?
8
       Α.
           No, sir.
9
       Q.
           Not a peep?
10
       Α.
           No, sir.
11
           And so you're still sitting outside, and shortly
       Q.
    after you get this text as 9:46, that's when you see
12
13
    this figure walk out from behind; is that correct?
14
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
15
           Do you recall about how long after that 9:46 text
       Q.
    that you saw this figure walk out from behind there?
16
           No, sir. I don't remember the exact time.
17
       Α.
18
           Do you remember if it was just a short time
       Q.
19
    later?
20
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
21
       Q.
                   In fact, you remember -- do you remember
22
    telling Detective Stewart, when you talked to him --
23
    well, let me back up a little bit.
24
                 Before you saw this person walk from -- or
25
    figure walk from behind that apartment, not only had you
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

```
not heard anything from inside that apartment, you
didn't see anybody go in that apartment, did you?
       No, sir.
   Α.
   Q.
       You didn't see -- and you would have been able to
see somebody go in that apartment if they had, wouldn't
you?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Regardless of whether it was around here or in
the front door, you would have seen them?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
       And, in fact, you even mentioned to Detective
   Q.
Stewart when you talked to him that there was a dog
there, that if somebody had been around there, they
would have barked?
       Yes, sir.
   Α.
   Q.
       That was your dog, correct?
       Yes, sir.
   Α.
       And your dog did not bark, did --
   Q.
   Α.
       No, sir.
       So you were fairly certain that from 9:15, when
   Q.
you got home, to 9:46, seeing that figure -- or shortly
after 9:46, seeing that figure walk out, that nobody
entered Mechelle Gandy's apartment?
   Α.
       Correct.
```

Okay. And when we talk about that apartment

1 complex and behind it, there's a fence that runs along 2 the whole back side of that apartment complex, isn't there? 3 Α. Correct. 4 5 Q. And it's, what, about an eight-foot fence? Taller than we are, isn't it? 6 7 Α. Yes. Yes. 8 Q. And beyond that fence is a deep ravine, isn't it? 9 Α. Yes, sir. I'm talking 20-, 30-feet deep, isn't it? 10 Q. 11 I don't remember how deep it was. Α. 12 Q. Okay. It was pretty --13 I just know there were thorns. Α. That -- it's not a place where people walk around 14 Q. back there? 15 16 Α. Oh, no, not at all. 17 Q. Okay. And so when you see this person walk from 18 behind, shortly after you get this text, then you start 19 seeing smoke; is that correct? 20 Α. Shortly after. 21 Q. Or the glow, I'm sorry. 22 Shortly after. Α. 23 Q. Shortly after. And do you remember telling

Detective Stewart, back when you talked to him, that

when you heard this person, that was maybe two to

24

```
1
    three minutes after you saw the -- it was two or
    three minutes until you saw the smoke?
2
3
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
       Q.
4
           Okay.
5
           Which I seen the glow.
       Α.
       Q.
           The glow?
6
7
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
8
       Q.
           I'm sorry. Okay.
9
                 And, again, you had seen nobody enter that
10
    apartment up until that period of time?
11
       Α.
           No. sir.
12
       Q.
           And you'd been out there the whole time?
           Yes, sir.
13
       Α.
           You would have seen someone if they had gone in
14
       Q.
15
    that apartment?
16
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
17
            In fact, you told Detective Stewart that somebody
       Q.
18
    had to have been in that apartment while you were out
19
    there because you certainly didn't see anybody come?
20
       Α.
           I didn't see nobody go in or out.
21
       Q.
            Exactly. Now, so when you --
                 MR. MOORE: I promise, y'all, it's harder
22
23
    than it looks.
24
                 Well, let me do this.
25
            (BY MR. MOORE) Referring back to State's Exhibit
       Q.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
No. 2, the aerial picture of this apartment complex,
this white truck is where you testified your and
Mechelle Gandy's apartment was, correct?
   Α.
       Yes. sir.
   Q.
       And back here we see -- this is that ravine I was
asking you about, isn't it, with all the trees and --
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       And there's a fence back here you can't see, but
there's a fence that runs all the way down this
property, correct?
   Α.
      Yes, sir.
   Q.
       I believe you testified that this area right in
here between these apartments is where you first saw
this person and this -- you didn't know whether it was a
male or a female, did you?
   Α.
       No, sir.
       It could have been a woman?
   Q.
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Don't know what race they were?
       No, sir.
   Α.
   Q.
       Did you see anything -- did they say anything?
       No, sir.
   Α.
       Were they running?
   Q.
   Α.
       No, sir.
       Just walking?
   Q.
```

```
1
       Α.
            Yes, sir.
2
       Q.
            So you really don't know whether they came out of
 3
    her apartment or not, do you?
            No, sir.
       Α.
 4
 5
            They just came out from that area?
       Q.
            Yes, sir.
6
       Α.
 7
            Shortly after the smoke?
       Q.
8
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
9
       Q.
            And this person walked this way, correct?
10
       Α.
            Kind of -- yes, in this direction. Yes.
11
       Q.
            They didn't walk down this way, they didn't
    walk --
12
13
       Α.
            No.
                 No.
            If -- this is north, correct?
14
       Q.
15
       Α.
            Yes.
16
           And this is south?
       Q.
            Yes.
17
       Α.
18
            They walked in the south --
       Q.
19
       Α.
            Yeah, just like that.
20
       Q.
            -- direction --
21
       Α.
            No --
22
                 THE COURT: One at a time.
23
                 THE WITNESS:
                                Sorry.
24
       Q.
            (BY MR. MOORE) Over here is the entrance to the
25
    apartments, correct?
```

```
1
       Α.
           Yes.
2
       Q.
           And so this person that you saw walking was
3
    walking southeasterly towards the front of the
    apartment?
4
           Correct.
5
       Α.
6
       Q.
           Did you see -- where -- when did you lose sight
7
    of this person?
8
       Α.
           I really didn't pay -- I just seen the direction
    he was walking and that was it. I went about my
9
10
    business.
       Q. Okay.
11
12
                 MR. MOORE: If I can have just a second,
    Your Honor?
13
                 THE COURT: Yes, sir.
14
15
                 (Pause in proceedings)
           (BY MR. MOORE) Just couple more questions,
16
       Q.
17
    Mr. Lopez.
18
                 The person that you saw walking out from
19
    behind there, do you remember what they were wearing?
20
       Α.
           No, sir.
21
           Do you remember telling Detective Stewart they
22
    were wearing some kind of a hoodie?
23
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
24
           Okay. The -- and you talked to Detective Stewart
       Q.
25
    shortly after this happened, didn't you?
```

```
Α.
           Yes, sir.
1
2
       Q.
           And you certainly would have had a better memory
3
    about it then than you do now, wouldn't you?
       Α.
           Correct.
4
5
       Q.
           And that's understandable because it's been three
    and a half years or so.
6
7
                And, again, you lived in those apartments.
8
    Do you remember telling Detective Stewart that if there
    had been some kind of a disturbance in that apartment,
9
10
    you would have heard something?
11
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
12
       Q.
           You -- because you told him that you could even
13
    hear the TV coming from that apartment at times,
    correct?
14
15
           The walls are thin.
       Α.
16
       Q.
           They were -- it's just a matter of fact, they
    were thin walls.
17
18
           Well, thank you, Mr. Lopez.
19
                 MR. MOORE: I'll pass the witness.
20
                 Oh, I'm sorry, Judge. One more thing.
21
                 Judge, we would offer Defendant's Exhibit
    No. 4.
22
                 THE COURT: Tamla, any objection to
23
24
    Defendant's 4, the chart?
25
                 MS. RAY: No. Your Honor.
```

```
THE COURT:
                            It will be admitted as offered.
1
2
                 (Defendant's Exhibit No. 4 admitted)
3
                 MR. MOORE:
                            And I pass the witness.
                 THE COURT:
                            All right.
4
5
                        REDIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MS. RAY:
6
7
       Q.
           Now, Issac, you stated that you get home about
    9:15ish?
8
9
       Α.
           Around that time, yes, ma'am.
10
       Q.
           And you had to get those fajitas on the grill?
11
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
12
       Q.
            They had been, I guess, just sitting in your
13
    kitchen all day defrosting?
            In the refrigerator, yes, ma'am.
14
       Α.
15
       Q.
           I'm sorry?
16
       Α.
           In the refrigerator.
17
       Q.
           So is that why you were concerned about getting
18
    those on the grill before they went bad?
19
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
20
           About how long from the time you -- how long
       Q.
21
    would it have taken you to get set up to get those on
22
    the grill?
           Around 15 minutes, maybe. Ten, 15 minutes.
23
       Α.
                                                           Ι
    don't know.
24
25
           Okay. So for those 10 or 15 minutes, I'm
       Q.
```

- 1 assuming you were in your kitchen getting those together? 2 3 Α. Yes. Q. So do you season your --4 5 No. They were already marinated. I got them Α. 6 from the meat market. 7 Q. So it took you 15 minutes inside the apartment to 8 get them ready to actually get them on the grill? Α. 9 No. 10 Q. How long would you say it took you --11 They were -- oh, sorry. Α. 12 Q. How long would you say it took you to get those 13 from the refrigerator to the grill? They were already in a bowl. I just pretty much 14 Α. had to wait for the coals to die down so I could put 15 them on. Just grab the bowl and put them on. 16 17 Q. Well, tell me about that. The -- was the grill 18 on the entire day while you were gone? 19 Α. No. 20 Okay. So when did you turn the grill on? Q. 21 Α. As soon as I got home. 22 Okay. So how long would it have taken that grill Q.
 - A. It usually takes like ten minutes.

24

25

to get ready?

Q. And you mentioned your son was out there with

```
1
    you?
                  The chalk is his.
2
       Α.
           Yes.
           The chalk on State's Exhibit 13?
3
       Q.
            If that's the one facing the door. Yeah, all
4
       Α.
5
    that in front of the front door, that's my son.
           That was all Julian's handiwork?
6
       Q.
7
       Α.
           Yeah.
8
       Q.
           When did Julian do all that?
9
       Α.
           We were outside together. We -- he was out there
10
    with me and that's what he was doing when we were
11
    outside.
12
       Q.
           So while you were out there on the grill, that's
13
    what Julian was doing?
14
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
15
       Q.
           So were you watching him do that?
16
       Α.
           Yeah. Yes, ma'am.
                                 Right.
           Was he doing the whole "Daddy, look at this."
17
       Q.
18
    "Daddy, look at that"?
19
       Α.
           Yeah, pretty much.
20
           Pulling your attention the way kids do to look at
       Q.
21
    their masterpieces.
22
                 And in State's Exhibit 13 we can see a grill
23
    next to that window. Is that the grill you were doing
24
    your fajitas?
25
                 That's -- it's just a little, kind of like a
       Α.
           No.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

15

17

18

19

21

24

```
fire -- like a -- kind of like a fire pit, kind of, like
    a little one my wife bought me.
           So that's not --
       Ω.
           Not -- no, that's not even a grill.
       Q.
           What did you end up doing with the grill that you
    were using?
           The fajitas never came off of it and I just moved
       Α.
    it to the side out of the way from -- so the fire
    department can go through it and stuff.
       Q.
           You didn't end up --
       Α.
           No, I didn't get to --
                THE COURT: One at a time.
12
13
                THE WITNESS:
                               Sorry.
           (BY MS. RAY) You end up wasting those fajitas
14
       Q.
    after all that work?
16
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
           Now, earlier with Mr. Moore, you said -- he asked
       Q.
    you a question about how -- what was the relationship
    between the time when you saw the figure and you saw
20
    the -- and you smelled smoke.
                Did you smell smoke before or after you saw
22
    that figure?
23
       Α.
           After.
           Okay. So you see the figure then you smelled
       Q.
    smoke?
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

I seen the figure, then I seen the glow, then I Α. smelled the smoke. Q. So the glow and smoke are afterwards? Yes. ma'am. Α. MS. RAY: One second, Your Honor. (Pause in proceedings) Q. (BY MS. RAY) Now, Issac, when you're looking at State's Exhibit 13, can you -- well, let me ask you this. While you were grilling, were you just standing grilling or were you seated next to it? How were -what was your setup? I was leaning on my car, on the front. And the Α. grill was in -- on the sidewalk and my son was playing right there. Q. And your son? Α. My son was playing right there in the -- on the porch. Can you point on -- well, let me ask you this. Q. Can you see on State's Exhibit 13 where your grill would have been? Α. No. Okay. So State's Exhibit 13 -- let me move this Q. stuff out of the way. Where on State's Exhibit 13 -- you said you can't -- you cannot see where the grill would have been?

```
1
       Α.
           No, ma'am.
2
       Q.
           Okay. If you can point on the screen
3
    generally -- why can you not see it? Where --
       Α.
           It's --
4
5
       Q.
           -- is it cut off?
           Right around this area, like over here in front
6
       Α.
7
    of my door. Like right here.
8
       Q.
           So the grill was not on the porch?
9
       Α.
           No.
10
       Q.
           And you stated when you saw the figure, you
11
    stated that your dog was with you and your dog did or
    did not bark when your dog saw the figure?
12
       Α.
13
           Did not.
           So when that figure walked past, that you saw,
14
       Q.
15
    your dog didn't bark then?
16
       Α.
           No, ma'am.
                 MS. RAY: Pass this witness, Your Honor.
17
18
                 MR. MOORE: Just a few more questions.
19
                        RECROSS-EXAMINATION
20
    BY MR. MOORE:
21
       Q.
           Mr. Lopez, you remember when you talked to
22
    Detective Stewart shortly after this incident and you
23
    told him that you had seen is a Lincoln vehicle in
24
    the -- going through the parking lot?
25
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
```

- Q. And that was a strange vehicle to the area?
- A. It was the only vehicle that I seen drive through the apartments.
- Q. Okay. And when did you see that drive through the apartment complex?
- A. Right before -- it was just right -- like right after I got home.
- Q. Okay. And where was that car going, which direction?
- A. Coming out of the apartments, like to leave out the front of the apartments, on the south part of the picture.
- Q. Okay. And you also remember telling Detective
 Stewart about an incident where some guy kicked in
 her -- Mechelle Gandy's door?
 - A. No.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

21

22

23

- Q. You don't recall telling him that?
- A. No. It was my wife's door. I told him an incident about something that happened in the past with my wife.
 - Q. Oh, okay. But you do remember telling Detective Stewart that you were out -- outside the whole time between when you got home and saw the smoke, you remember that?
- 25 A. Pretty much, yes.

```
1
           And you also remember telling him, telling
       Q.
    Detective Stewart, that in your opinion somebody had to
2
3
    have been in there the whole time because you didn't see
4
    them come or go?
5
       Α.
           Yes.
       Q.
           Okay. Thank you, sir.
6
7
                 MR. MOORE: I'll pass the witness.
8
                 MS. RAY: Briefly, Your Honor.
9
                   FURTHER REDIRECT EXAMINATION
10
    BY MS. RAY:
11
       Q.
           The Lincoln that you were talking about, what
    sort of -- was it a sedan or an SUV? What kind of
12
13
    Lincoln are you talking about?
14
           It was like an older model. Like a '96 model.
       Α.
15
       Q.
           '96 model of --
16
           Because I can -- yeah. I work on cars. It was
       Α.
    about a '90 -- it was like a '96 four-door.
17
18
       Q.
           Four-door?
19
       Α.
           Yeah.
20
       Q.
           Sedan?
21
       Α.
           Yeah.
22
           And do you recall describing the figure as being
       Q.
    a little by bit taller than you?
23
24
       Α.
           Yes.
25
       Q.
           Little beefier than you?
```

```
1
       Α.
           Yes.
2
       Q.
           How tall are you?
           I'm 5'9.
3
       Α.
                MS. RAY: I pass the witness, Your Honor.
4
5
                MR. MOORE:
                             Judge, I have no other questions
    of this witness.
6
7
                THE COURT: May this witness be permanently
8
    excused from these proceedings, if you have no other
9
    questions?
                MR. MOORE: We would just like him subject
10
11
    to recall.
12
                THE COURT: Just to be available on
    reasonable notice?
13
14
                MR. MOORE: Yes.
15
                THE COURT: All right. You still live in
    this area?
16
                THE WITNESS: I live in Lewisville.
17
18
                THE COURT: Lewisville. But, I mean, if
19
    someone told you they need you back tomorrow, the judge
20
    will get you a letter if you need to back, if they call
21
    you.
22
                THE WITNESS: Yeah.
                                      I just --
23
                THE COURT: That would be better than
24
    sitting in the hall for a couple weeks, wouldn't it?
25
                THE WITNESS: I started a new job, so it's
```

```
1
    kind of --
2
                THE COURT: Listen to me carefully. Would
3
    that be better than having to sit in the hall and wait
    to see if they need you?
4
5
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                THE COURT: All right. Is -- your employer,
6
7
    you can tell them you're a witness in a criminal trial,
8
    the judge is releasing you to work. But you -- if you
9
    get notified the day before you're needed back -- you
10
    need to be back, you need to be back. And if he has a
11
    problem with it, he needs to call me. Okay? And if he
12
    needs a letter to verify you had to be back, I can take
13
    care of that for you.
14
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                THE COURT: They might not need you back.
15
16
    They know how to get ahold of you. If they don't call
17
    you, you don't worry about it. But if they call you,
18
    they will call you the day before you're needed back.
19
    So it won't be like "be here in an hour".
20
                Does that make sense?
21
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
22
                THE COURT: Okay. All right. I do thank
23
    you for coming in. Remember those instructions.
24
                THE WITNESS: Would --
25
                THE COURT: If you've got a question, go
```

```
1
    ahead.
2
                THE WITNESS: Would it be like a -- they'll
3
    let me know a day before, correct?
                THE COURT: Well, if they needed you on
4
5
    Thursday, they would call you on Wednesday and say we
    need you on Thursday. They won't call you Thursday at
6
7
    9:00 and say be here at 11:00.
8
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
9
                THE COURT: Okay. Does that make sense?
10
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
11
                THE COURT: All right. Thanks for coming in
12
    and you're excused as a witness for -- but you're on
    call if needed.
13
                THE WITNESS: So I'm able to leave after --
14
15
                THE COURT: That means you can go wherever
    you want right now. Just make sure I can get you back
16
    if I need you.
17
18
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
19
                THE COURT: All right. Thanks for coming
20
    in.
21
                (Witness excused from courtroom)
22
                THE COURT:
                            Members of the jury, you can go
23
    have lunch. Be back in an hour and 15 minutes from
24
    whatever time you walk out the jury room door, after --
    if anyone needs to powder their nose or whatever, and
25
```

```
1
    the sheriff will let us know.
2
                Everyone else be back in an hour and ten
3
    minutes from whatever time that the sheriff tells you
4
    the jury has left the floor. Everyone remain in the
5
    courtroom until the jury has left the hall.
                 (Lunch break, 12:50 - 2:10 p.m.)
6
7
                 (OPEN COURT, DEFENDANT PRESENT, NO JURY)
8
                (Witness on the stand)
9
                THE COURT: State your full, legal name for
10
    Karen.
11
                THE WITNESS: Celia Lopez.
12
                THE COURT: Face me and raise your right
    hand.
13
14
                (One witness sworn)
15
                THE COURT: There's some rules you have to
    follow until the trial is over. Number one, you can
16
17
    only be in the courtroom when you're answering
18
    questions. You can't sit in and listen to other people.
19
                Still with me?
20
                THE WITNESS: Uh-huh.
                THE COURT: Is that a "yes" uh-huh?
21
22
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
23
                THE COURT: Rule 1.1 is you've got to answer
               She can't write nods and shakes and uh-huhs.
24
    out loud.
25
    You've got to use words. Okay?
```

THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 1 THE COURT: You can't talk to anyone about 2 3 anything that has to do with the trial or the people 4 involved, including -- I think your husband was here a 5 few minutes ago. THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 6 7 THE COURT: You can't talk to him about 8 anything that has to do with the trial until the trial 9 is over. You may only talk about what goes on in the 10 courtroom or what went on at the time of the events 11 giving rise to the trial, if you're speaking in private 12 with these lawyers or their staff or you're answering 13 questions in open court in the presence of the jury or 14 the judge. 15 Still with me? 16 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 17 THE COURT: Make sure you hear and 18 understand any question. And if you can't hear or don't 19 understand, just say so. Make them word it where you 20 know what you're being asked, but never wing it. 21 Do you understand? 22 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 23 THE COURT: And make sure -- and you're 24 doing this very well. Make sure whoever is talking 25 stops before you answer because she cannot type two

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
people talking at the same time. So if someone says
slow down, one a time, speak up, they're not picking on
     They're helping her do her job.
vou.
            Do you understand?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT: If she can't hear and write it,
the jury can't hear and understand it. That's kind of
what lawyers slowly figured out over time and that court
reporters have always known. They teach them that in
school.
            You good to go?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT: State, good to go?
            MR. ROUSSEAU: Yes, Your Honor.
            THE COURT: Defense good to go?
            MR. MOORE: We're good to go.
            THE COURT: Well, the jury apparently is not
good to go, so we will stand down for a minute.
            For the record, the jury returned from lunch
and they've asked for a few more minutes to freshen up.
            (Pause in proceedings)
            (Jury seated in courtroom)
            THE COURT: You may call and identify your
next witness.
            MS. RAY: Your Honor, we call Celia Lopez.
```

```
THE COURT: Will you say your name out loud
1
    for me one more time and for Karen and also for these
2
3
    people on the jury.
                 THE WITNESS: Celia Lopez.
4
5
                 THE COURT: And I swore you in, placed you
    under oath -- O-A-T-H, Karen -- explained the rules
6
7
    of -- witnesses have to follow while a trial is in
8
    progress, and that was all done when they were at lunch;
9
    is that right?
10
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
11
                 THE COURT: All right. Then you may
12
    proceed.
13
                MS. RAY:
                           Thank you, Your Honor.
14
                           CELIA LOPEZ,
15
    having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
16
                        DIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MS. RAY:
17
18
       Q.
           Celia, you are currently married to Paul -- or
19
    Issac, correct?
20
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
21
       Q.
           And how long have you and Issac been married?
22
       Α.
           A year.
23
       Q.
           It's a test.
24
       Α.
           Well, I didn't --
25
           He apparently thinks y'all have been married four
       Q.
```

```
1
    and a half years.
           No.
 2
       Α.
               We -- our wedding was -- was last July.
 3
       Q.
            Okay. But y'all have been together for a very
    long time?
 4
           Yes.
 5
       Α.
6
       Q.
            Must be flattering to know that he's considered
 7
    you his wife since the moment he met you, apparently.
       Α.
8
           Yes.
9
       Q.
           Okay. Do y'all have children?
10
       Α.
           Yes.
11
       Q.
           Three children, I believe?
12
       Α.
           Yes.
13
           And y'all currently live in Lewisville?
       Q.
14
           Yes.
       Α.
15
            Now, what do you currently do?
       Q.
16
            I'm a schoolteacher.
       Α.
17
       Q.
            So you are missing out on what grade?
18
       Α.
            Seventh grade math.
19
       Q.
            Seventh grade math. How are those kids treating
20
    you?
21
            There's 150 them.
       Α.
22
           You don't teach -- you don't teach 150 children
       Q.
23
    all at once, correct?
24
       Α.
           No. Like 30 at a time.
25
       Q.
            Okay. Thirty at a time.
```

```
1
                 Do you enjoy that work?
           Yes.
2
       Α.
 3
       Q.
           How long have you been a teacher?
 4
       Α.
            Three years now.
       Q.
           Three?
 5
6
       Α.
           Yes.
 7
       Q.
           Back in 2011 were you and Paul still -- y'all
8
    were dating then?
9
       Α.
           Yes.
10
            Do you recall where y'all were living?
       Q.
11
           We both had our own apartments, but we really
       Α.
12
    stayed at his apartment.
           So y'all both had separate apartments, but you
13
       Q.
    were generally at his apartment?
14
15
           Yes. And they were across the street from each
16
    other.
17
           And do you recall the name of his apartment
       Q.
18
    complex?
19
       Α.
           Yes.
20
           What were his apartments called?
       Q.
21
           Presidents Corner.
       Α.
22
           And how close was your apartment to his?
       Q.
23
       Α.
           Across the street.
                 MS. RAY: Your Honor, may I approach the
24
25
    witness?
```

```
THE COURT:
1
                             You may.
            (BY MS. RAY) Celia, I'm showing you what's been
2
       Q.
3
    admitted as State's Exhibit 2. Are you familiar with
    what State's Exhibit 2 depicts?
4
           The picture?
5
       Α.
       Q.
           Yes.
6
7
       Α.
           Yes.
           Okay. And these are the apartment complexes --
8
       Q.
    the apartment complex where Issac lived back in March of
9
10
    2011?
11
       Α.
           Yes.
12
       Q.
           Can you see the complex where you were living at
    the time?
13
14
       Α.
           Yes.
           Okay. If you could, mark on State's Exhibit 2
15
       Q.
16
    where you were living back in March of 2011?
17
       Α.
           My apartment or his?
18
       Q.
           Your apartment.
19
       Α.
           My apartment was in Oak Forest, over here.
20
       Q.
           So across the street?
21
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
22
       Q.
           Okay.
23
                 THE COURT: For the record, are you pointing
24
    on the far right side of that picture?
25
                 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
```

```
THE COURT:
                           In the -- kind of in the middle?
1
2
                 THE WITNESS: It's -- actually, there's a
3
    little road this way. It's not on the picture itself.
    Like it's not one of these buildings right here. It's
4
5
    in a building over here, in space.
                THE COURT: You're pointing off to the right
6
7
    of the picture?
8
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
9
                THE COURT: For the purpose of the court
    reporter.
10
11
                Okay. You may continue.
                 Because I couldn't see the little dot
12
13
    because it wasn't on the picture.
14
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okav.
15
                 THE COURT: Is that why? Okay.
16
       Q.
           (BY MS. RAY) So it didn't take you too long to
    get back and forth between your -- those two apartments?
17
18
       Α.
           No, ma'am.
19
       Q.
           And I believe at the time you had a son from a
20
    prior relationship?
21
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
           Julian?
22
       Q.
23
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
           How old was Julian back in 2011?
24
       Q.
25
           He was four.
       Α.
```

1 Q. And --2 Sorry, five. Because he was born in '06. 3 was -- he had just turned five. He was five years old. Did he live with you full-time? 4 Q. Yes. 5 Α. 6 Q. And I understand that Issac also has a daughter 7 from another relationship? 8 Α. Yes. 9 Q. Do you remember how old she was? 10 Α. Seven. 11 Q. Okay. Did she live with y'all full-time or was she there on weekends? 12 Weekends. 13 Α. Weekends? 14 Q. 15 Uh-huh. Α. 16 Do you recall ever meeting a woman by the name of Q. Mechelle Gandy? 17 18 Α. Yes. 19 Q. And what -- when did you meet Mechelle? 20 Α. I only met her a couple of times, but I'd seen 21 her that same month. 22 Q. The same month? 23 Α. In March. 24 Q. Okay. Of -- the same month that she died? 25 Α. Yes.

```
1
       Q.
           And was that the first time you had seen her, in
    March?
 2
       Α.
            I don't remember.
 3
       Q.
           Had Issac lived in that apartment complex very
 4
 5
    long?
       Α.
6
           No.
 7
       Q.
           About how long, less than a year? More than a
8
    year, would you think?
9
       Α.
            Less than a year.
10
       Q.
           Much less? Like less than six months?
11
       Α.
            I think he moved in around December-ish.
                                                        I don't
12
    remember if it was before Christmas or what, but...
           But it was around Christmastime?
13
       Q.
       Α.
           Yes.
14
15
           Of -- I guess Christmas of 2010?
       Q.
16
           Yes.
       Α.
           And did Mechelle, did she live there before Issac
17
       Q.
18
    got there or did she move in afterwards?
19
       Α.
            I don't know.
20
            Did you know Mechelle's family situation in terms
       Q.
21
    of did you know if she had any children?
22
       Α.
           Yes.
23
       Q.
           And how many children did she have?
24
       Α.
           One.
25
       Q.
           And a boy or girl?
```

Boy. 1 Α. And his name? 2 Q. 3 Α. Asher. Q. Had you met Asher? 4 Yes. 5 Α. 6 Q. Were you around when Asher had his birthday 7 party? 8 I wasn't around at the birthday party, but I had 9 seen him -- it was either after or before. He was 10 walking. 11 Q. He was walking? 12 Well, she had him on her fingers. Like he was Α. 13 holding her fingers, last I remember. 14 Q. So that's your last memory of Asher? 15 Uh-huh. Yes, ma'am. Α. 16 Would it be fair to say that Mechelle was a Q. pretty friendly neighbor? 17 18 Α. Yes, ma'am. 19 Q. On -- back in March, where was Issac working? 20 Α. At Lowe's. 21 Q. Do you remember what time it would have been when 22 he got off work? Around 9:00 o'clock. 23 Α. 24 Q. On March 20th, 2011, that was the night of the 25 fire, do you recall if Issac would have been working

```
1
    that evening?
       Α.
           Yes.
2
3
       Q.
           And would he have gotten off at the same --
    around the same time?
4
5
       Α.
           Yes.
           Which Lowe's was he working at?
6
       Q.
7
       Α.
           The one on Eastchase. Right down the street from
8
    the apartment.
          Pretty -- fairly close to y'all -- where y'all
9
10
    were living?
11
       Α.
           Yes.
12
       Q.
           Do you recall if or when you would have picked
    him up from work?
13
14
           I would have been there like right on time.
                                                           So
15
    probably been there at 9:00.
16
           At 9:00. And did y'all come straight home?
       Q.
           I believe so.
17
       Α.
18
       Q.
           About how long would it have taken you to get
19
    home?
20
       Α.
           Ten, 15 minutes.
21
       Q.
           When you got home, what do you recall y'all
22
    doing?
           Him and my son -- he was grilling and my son was
23
       Α.
24
    drawing with chalk, but I was doing laundry.
25
           So where were you doing laundry?
       Q.
```

- A. I had done the laundry at my house, so I had just brought it over from my house and I was hanging up all the wet clothes in his house to dry.
- Q. And when you first got home from the Lowe's, did you drop Issac and your boy off and then go get your clothes?
 - A. Most likely. But I don't remember.
- Q. But by the time you came back with your clothes, Issac was grilling. Is that what you just said?
- A. Yes.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

- 11 Q. And what about Julian, what was Julian doing?
- A. He was playing with chalk. He was drawing on the ground.
 - Q. What did you do when you got back to the apartment?
 - A. I was hanging up the clothes in the back, the back closet.
 - Q. If you could, describe the layout of Issac's apartment back then? Was it a large apartment?
 - A. No. It was just one bedroom. And it didn't have any furniture, really, in it.
 - Q. It didn't have any furniture in it?
- A. Not really. He had a couch and two blowup

 and mattresses.
- 25 Q. Okay. So he --

1 Α. All the furniture was at my apartment. He was a single guy so he just had --2 3 Q. Okay. Did you change that? When we moved back to my apartment. Α. 4 5 Q. So when y'all finally got together, made it 6 serious, you moved him back to your apartment? 7 Α. Yes. Where there was furniture? 8 Q. 9 Α. Yes. 10 Like a proper adult? Q. 11 Α. Yes. 12 Q. Okay. So while -- so Issac's apartment is a one-bedroom apartment? 13 14 Yes, ma'am. Α. 15 Q. With --MS. RAY: May I approach, Your Honor? 16 17 THE COURT: Yes, ma'am. 18 Q. (BY MS. RAY) Showing you what's already been 19 admitted as State's Exhibit 13. Take a look at State's 20 Exhibit 13. And State's Exhibit 13, is that a picture 21 of the doorway to Issac's apartment and Mechelle's 22 apartment? 23 Α. Yes. And there's a window in between? 24 Q. 25 Α. Yes.

- Q. That window went to which apartment?
- 2 A. To Issac's.

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

- Q. And do you know that window -- what room would that have been?
- A. That's the living room.
- Q. You stated earlier that Julian was drawing on the sidewalk. Is that what's depicted in 13?
 - A. Yes. Yes.
- Q. When Julian was out there doing these kind of masterpieces, did he require attention? Did he want people to watch him and see his work as it unfolded?
- A. If he did, it would have been Issac's job.
- 13 Q. Okay. Issac was in charge of watching Julian?
 - A. Yes, because I was busy with the clothes.
 - Q. Okay. Training him up and testing him out to see if he was going to be a good dad.
 - The -- so you're in the apartment. Which part of the apartment were you when you were hanging up the clothing?
 - A. I was in the one bedroom that they have, in the back closet.
- Q. So is that close to where that living -- is
 that -- where -- close to where that window is, or is it
 in the back of the apartment?
- A. No. It goes the window and then the living room

and then the room. And against the back window, sliding glass door thing, is where the closet is. And I was in the closet hanging up, because it was a big closet.

- Q. So were you aware of any comings and goings in the apartment?
 - A. No.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

20

22

- Q. At some point were you made aware that something was going wrong or something had happened?
 - A. Yes.
 - Q. What happened?
- A. Issac came in saying -- asking me if I smell that and I was like no. And then he -- they have plastic blinds and he had pulled the plastic blinds back and when he pulled the plastic blinds back, you just saw gulfs of flames.
- Q. Could you see where those gulfs of flames were coming from?
- A. It was so bright. It was right there where his room is.
 - Q. Where whose room is?
- A. Asher's.
 - Q. Did you -- you had an idea of how Mechelle's apartment was laid out?
- 24 A. Yes.
- Q. So you knew which room belonged to Asher?

1 Α. Yes. Now, when y'all first got to the apartment, did 2 Q. 3 you see -- or -- did you see Mechelle or Asher when you 4 first got home? 5 Α. No. 6 Q. Did you have reason to believe that Mechelle was 7 home? 8 Α. When I saw her car. 9 Q. And when you saw that Asher's bedroom was on 10 fire, what did you do? I called 9-1-1. 11 Α. 12 MS. RAY: May I approach the witness, Your Honor? 13 14 THE COURT: Yes. 15 (BY MS. RAY) Celia, I'm showing you what's been Q. marked as State's Exhibit 1. Are you familiar with 16 State's Exhibit 1? 17 18 Α. Yes. 19 Q. Okay. And it is a CD? 20 Α. Yes. 21 Q. And do you recall what is depicted on State's Exhibit 1? 22 23 Α. Yes. 24 Q. And what is on State's Exhibit 1? 25 A. The 9-1-1 phone call I made.

```
And you've listened to State's Exhibit 1 before?
1
       Q.
2
       Α.
           Yes.
3
       Q.
           Looks like you've initialed and dated it when you
    listened to it?
4
5
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
       Q.
           And does it appear to be an accurate copy of the
6
7
    9-1-1 call you made?
8
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
9
       Q.
           You recognize your voice?
           Yes. ma'am.
10
       Α.
11
                 MS. RAY: Your Honor, I offer State's
12
    Exhibit 1, after tendering to Defense Counsel for
13
    inspection.
14
                 MR. MOORE: I have no objection, Your Honor.
15
                 THE COURT: All right. State's 1 is
16
    admitted.
17
                 (State's Exhibit No. 1 admitted)
18
       Q.
           (BY MS. RAY) Celia, while you were on the --
19
    Celia, while you were on the phone with dispatch, what
20
    was Issac doing?
21
           He kept asking me to ask them if they want him to
22
    kick in the door.
           And what were you doing, did you relay that to
23
       Q.
24
    the 9-1-1 dispatch?
25
       A. Yes, but they didn't answer me fast enough.
                                                           Не
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
had already kicked in the door.
       So before you could even get an answer, Issac is
kicking in the door?
   Α.
       Yes, because he was afraid about the baby.
   Q.
       I'm sorry?
       He was worried about the baby.
   Α.
   Q.
       How about you, were you concerned?
   Α.
       Yeah.
              Because it was massive flames. It was...
            MS. RAY: Your Honor, at this time I would
ask permission to publish State's Exhibit 11 -- or
sorry -- State's Exhibit No. 1.
            THE COURT:
                        Do you intend to do that by
playing it through the audio/visual equipment in the
courtroom?
            MS. RAY: Yes, Your Honor.
                        Using your laptop?
            THE COURT:
            MS. RAY: Yes, Your Honor.
            THE COURT: You may do so.
            (State's Exhibit No. 1 played in open court)
   Q.
       (BY MS. RAY) Now, Celia, parts of that call, of
course, are hard -- somewhat difficult to understand.
While you were on the phone, I can hear some banging in
the background. What was that?
   Α.
       It was -- it would have been him banging on the
door, or I went around and was telling -- and seeing if
```

```
any of the neighbors were upstairs to tell them to get out of the apartments, as well.
```

- Q. So while you're on the phone with 9-1-1 dispatch, you're also running around trying to warn your neighbors?
- A. Yes.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

15

16

19

20

- Q. And what is -- what was Julian doing at the time?
- A. I tried to get Julian and the dog into the car, but I don't remember when I did that.
 - Q. You were trying to get them out of harm's way?
- 11 A. Uh-huh.
- 12 Q. At some point did the firefighters get there, the 13 fire department?
- 14 A. Yes, ma'am.
 - Q. About how long did it seem to take for the fire department to get there?
- A. I don't think very long. It was just right down the street.
 - Q. The fire department was down the street from you guys?
- 21 A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. It sounds like we can hear some sirens on that recording. Would that have been the fire department?
 - A. Possibly.
- Q. Did you watch when the fire department arrived?

1 Α. Yes, ma'am. What did you see them do? 2 Q. 3 I saw them bring Mechelle out. Α. You saw them bringing Mechelle out? 4 Ο. Uh-huh. 5 Α. And where did they carry Mechelle? 6 Q. 7 Right in front of where Julian was doing the Α. 8 chalk. 9 Q. Did you see how she was dressed? 10 Α. Yes, ma'am. 11 Q. What was she wearing? She had no clothes on. 12 Α. 13 Q. Did she appear to be conscious? No, ma'am. 14 Α. 15 Did you watch as they tried to save Mechelle's Q. 16 life? Yes, ma'am. 17 Α. 18 How long did it appear that they tried to save Q. 19 her? 20 Α. I don't know. 21 Q. Did it seem like a long time? 22 Α. I don't know. 23 At that time did you know what, if anything, had Q. 24 happened to Asher? 25 I kept telling the fire department that Α.

there was a baby in there.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

16

17

18

- Q. Did they appear to be responding to you when you told them there was a baby in there?
- A. I told everyone that came out that there was a baby, because they couldn't tell me where the baby was. And they kept saying maybe the baby wasn't there, maybe he was with family. And I told them that if the car was there, the baby was there.
- Q. So you're asking them where is the baby and they're telling you, well, we're not even sure there's a baby in there?
- A. Yes, ma'am.
- Q. And you told them that if that car is there,
 Mechelle is there and that baby is there?
- 15 A. Yes, ma'am.
 - Q. Were you there when they stopped working on Mechelle?
 - A. Yes, ma'am.
- 19 Q. Were you there when they declared her dead?
- 20 A. Yes, ma'am.
- 21 Q. Did you ever see Asher?
- 22 A. No, ma'am.
- Q. Did you ever find out what had happened to Asher that night?
 - A. We did find out. I don't remember if it was that

```
1
    night or early that morning.
2
           At some point did you leave the apartment to go
3
    to your apartment?
       Α.
           Yes. ma'am.
4
5
           By the time you left to go to your apartment, had
       Q.
6
    you heard any news about Asher?
7
           No, ma'am.
       Α.
8
                MS. RAY: I'll pass this witness, Your
9
    Honor.
10
                THE COURT:
                             Defense may cross.
11
                MR. MOORE:
                             Judge, I don't have any
12
    questions.
13
                THE COURT:
                             May this witness be excused?
                MR. MOORE:
14
                             She may.
15
                THE COURT:
                             Ditto?
16
                MS. RAY:
                           No objections, Your Honor.
                             Then you're going to be excused
17
                THE COURT:
18
    from the trial. You're not on call. You don't have to
19
    come back. But you can't talk to anyone about anything,
20
    including your husband, until you find out the trial is
21
    over, if it relates to anything having to do with court,
22
    versus kids or baseball or whatever.
23
                Do you understand the difference?
24
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
25
                THE COURT: All right. Thank you for coming
```

```
And take your water with you, too.
1
    in.
                THE WITNESS: Will y'all let us know when
2
3
    it's over?
                THE COURT: I think the lawyers will try to
4
    keep up with you. If there's any doubt you have, call
5
    the court number and ask one of the staff if it's over
6
7
    or not. The number -- get one of the deputies in the
8
    back to give you the phone number. Okay?
9
                THE WITNESS: Thank you.
10
                (Witness excused from courtroom)
11
                THE COURT: You may call your next witness.
12
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Your Honor, we're going to
13
    call Officer Arias, A-R-I-A-S.
14
                (Witness takes the stand)
15
                THE COURT: State your full, legal name out
    loud.
16
                THE WITNESS: Jason Michael Arias.
17
18
                THE COURT: I need you to face me and raise
19
    your right hand.
20
                (One witness sworn)
21
                THE COURT: Have you ever testified before?
22
                THE WITNESS:
                              No, sir.
23
                THE COURT: There are certain rules you need
24
    to know about that will apply pretty much in any
25
    district court trial. The first rule is you cannot be
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

in the courtroom when other people are answering questions, only when it's your turn to testify. For the same reason, you're not allowed to talk to those people during the trial about anything you know or they know about anything that has to do with the trial or the people involved. The rule says you cannot discuss your testimony with other witnesses.

Are you still with me?

THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.

THE COURT: You may speak in private with the attorneys for either side or their staffs so they know what questions to ask you or to respond to their requests, but you must make sure other witnesses cannot listen in on your conversations. Make sure you hear and understand the question asked and if you can't hear or don't understand, then just say so, but never wing it. Don't guess. And if you do understand the question, answer that question, stop, wait for the next question. Don't volunteer information, because her hands have to rest and she can't write it down if we're all talking at the same time, and she doesn't like it when we're all talking as fast as I am right now.

Do you understand?

THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.

THE COURT: Kevin.

1 JASON ARIAS, having been first duly sworn, testified as follows: 2 DIRECT EXAMINATION 3 BY MR. ROUSSEAU: 4 5 Q. Good afternoon. Well, as I was just about call your name as our next witness, I realized I am very 6 7 familiar with calling officers, police officers, as officer so and so. What would be the appropriate term 8 9 for you? What is your title? I'm an engineer. It's a fancy word for a driver. 10 Α. 11 Q. Fancy word for driver. 12 You work for the Arlington Fire Department, 13 correct? 14 Α. Yes, sir. 15 And "engineer," it may speak for itself, but tell Q. 16 the jury exactly what that means. My responsibility, I'm a driver/operator. 17 Α. 18 drive the fire truck. We respond to emergencies. 19 responsible for getting the truck there safely. On the 20 fire ground I'm responsible for the tool and equipment 21 on the truck. I'm responsible for assuring that my 22 crews inside have water. Okay. And how long have you been -- I'm going to 23 Q. 24 refer to the term -- use the term "firefighter" 25 generally to speak about your career with the Arlington

```
1
    Fire Department. If I've got -- if I -- if that's an
2
    incorrect term, let me know if it needs to be corrected.
3
    0kay?
       Α.
           Yes. sir.
4
5
       Q.
           And how long have you been a firefighter with the
6
    City of Arlington?
7
       Α.
           Almost six years.
8
       Q.
           And did you do that type of work anywhere else
    before joining the City of Arlington?
9
10
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
11
       Q.
           With whom?
12
       Α.
           The City of Keller.
13
       Q.
           Altogether how long have you been a firefighter?
14
       Α.
           About ten years.
           During that time -- well, how do you go about
15
       Q.
16
    becoming a firefighter? What type of educational
    requirements did you have?
17
18
           I hold a State of Texas Fire Commission
19
    certification which allows me to be firefighter in the
20
    state of Texas. I also hold a paramedic certificate
21
    through the State of Texas which allows me to practice
22
    as a paramedic on sick and injured people. On top of
    that, I've had some training for my job specifically as
23
```

a driver/operator. I'm also certified as a hazard --

hazardous materials technician through the State of

24

1 Texas, as well as an instructor. 2 Q. And as a starting point for all of that, did you 3 have to -- was there -- were there any formal educational requirements to get your first job? 4 5 Α. Just to be certified through the State of Texas. Q. Okay. And you've been with the City of Arlington 6 7 for about six years now? 8 Α. Almost. 9 You said that your -- and your current position 10 is that of an engineer, correct? 11 Α. Yes, sir. 12 Q. Is that a rank, as well as just a job? Yes, sir. 13 Α. 14 Q. Okay. And is that a rank that is higher than you held back in March of 2011? 15 16 Α. That's correct. 17 Q. In March of 2011, what was your job title then? 18 Α. Firefighter. And it may speak for itself, but why don't you 19 Q.

Q. And it may speak for itself, but why don't you tell the jury what the job of a firefighter is.

20

21

22

23

24

25

A. So on fire truck there are different roles and responsibilities. As a driver, I drive now. At the time of the incident, I was a firefighter. Typically those are the guys riding in the back. The guys in the back are responsible for -- if we arrive to a fire,

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

```
those are the guys going inside typically on the
hoseline. They'll be going in, along with the officer
on that fire truck, which is the lieutenant. So during
this incident I was a firefighter, riding backwards, who
arrived on the scene and our job was to make entry on
the hoseline with our lieutenant.
       Well, let's start with, where were you
   Q.
stationed -- well, if I use -- maybe I'm not phrasing
that very well. Are -- as a firefighter, were you
assigned to a specific fire station?
   Α.
      Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Okay. And where was that fire station?
       That particular night?
   Α.
   Q.
       Yes, sir.
       That particular night, it was Station 8.
   Α.
       Station what?
   Q.
       Station No. 8.
   Α.
   Q.
       Station No. 8.
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       And in -- and where in proximity to the location
of this fire was Station 8 located?
   Α.
       Station 8 is southeast of the location by
about -- I don't know the exact distance.
       If you're in a car drive -- normal driving, how
   Q.
```

long would it take you to get there?

- Α. Two minutes.
 - Q. So you're just down the street?
- Yes, sir. Α.

2

3

4

5

6

8

10

11

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

- How did you first become aware that you were Q. being -- that you were -- your services were needed at this location?
- 7 A. We got the tones for the emergency, came in as a structure fire. And we responded, like we do for any 9 structure fire. I got on the truck and started to bunk out, which is putting our gear on and getting ready. knew that it was in our district so we knew the 12 likelihood of us being first on was very good. And then 13 en route was -- when actually en route, we could see a column of smoke so we knew that it was probably going to 14 15 be a legitimate fire.
 - So let's -- well, what time of the night was this Q. when you got this call?
 - I don't remember the exact numbers. It was around 10:30, give or take, p.m.
 - Okay. Do you -- after everything was over and Q. done that night, did you go back to the fire station or somewhere and write out a -- the narrative of your experiences that night?
- 24 Α. Yes, sir.
- 25 Q. Okay. And have you had a chance to review that?

- Yes, sir. 1 Α. 2 Q. Do you have a copy of it with you, by any chance? 3 No. No, sir, I don't. Α. Okay. If I told you that you had written 4 Q. 5 22:11:23 hours as the time of dispatch, would that be -would that jibe with your memory? 6 7 Α. That sounds pretty close. 8 Q. That would be -- in civilian speak, that would be about ten hours -- 10:00 o'clock and 11 minutes, right? 9 Α. 10 Yes. 11 Q. 10:11 at night? 12 Α. Yes, sir. 13 Okay. So you said you could see a column of Q. 14 smoke while you were en route? 15 Yes, sir. Α. Tell me, as a firefighter, what does that 16 Q. 17 indicate to you. 18 It indicates that something is actually burning 19 and that the call for our service is probably 20 legitimate. 21 Q. 22
 - Is there a -- is it -- so you're on your way over there, you could already see the smoke, correct?
 - Α. Yes, sir.

24

25

When you arrived, tell me what your initial observations were.

- A. There was a first floor corner unit that was -had thick black smoke pushing from it. I don't recall
 if the second floor was on fire. I do know that the
 first floor was on fire for sure.
- Q. Okay. Common or uncommon to have a fire like that in an apartment in Arlington?
- A. I mean, I've made several of them, so just depends on by whose standards.
- Q. As -- well, as these -- as fires go, as your -- in your experience as an Arlington firefighter, would this be a --
- A. Fairly common.

- Q. -- would this be a big incident or fairly common?
 - A. No, it's fair -- I would say fairly common.
 - Q. Okay. So as you got there, did you already -- you said you were bunked out?
- 17 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Tell the jury what that means.
 - A. By the time we arrived on scene, fully bunked out means that we're stepping off the truck with all our gear on, including coat, pants, mask, helmet, air pack, gloves. The only thing that we lack is getting to the front door and clicking in to our air. We wait until the last second to put on our air on so that we conserve all that air for when we need it. So fully bunked out

```
1
    is everything minus the air until we get to that front
    door.
2
3
       Q.
           And that's ready to go?
           Yes. sir.
       Α.
4
5
           What are your -- what was your initial
       Q.
6
    responsibilities when you got there? You told us you
7
    stepped off the truck, what was your initial
8
    responsibility?
9
           My responsibility, I went around to the driver's
10
    side of the engine and pulled a hoseline and we extended
11
    the hoseline to the front door. The engineer at the
12
    time charged the hoseline, means they basically just
13
    filled it with water for us to make entry.
14
       O.
           Is that water carried on the truck?
15
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
16
           Go ahead.
       Q.
17
           And the hoseline was charged and we were just
       Α.
18
    about to make entry into that first floor unit.
19
       Q.
           Do you recall if the front door was open or if
20
    you had to open it?
21
       Α.
           It was already open.
22
       Q.
           Standing open?
23
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
24
           As you're standing there in the front door, can
       Q.
```

you see fire?

A. Fire, no; smoke, yes.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

- Q. Okay. So what did you do?
- Α. We go through a process whenever we charge our hoseline, fill it with water, where we bleed it off, the air, so that when we get inside, we open a nozzle, we have water, we don't have to wait for the water through the air. So I was bleeding off the hoseline. And my partner who was with me, about to make entry with me, was knelt down, starts hitting me on my leg. looked down at him and that's when he told me that we had a victim inside the front door. His job is to gain access through the front door if it -- if it's already -- if it's closed still, which it was not, and then do a primary sweep with a tool inside the front door. The majority of our victims are found within a few feet from the front door. So that's what he did and that's when he struck the victim's leg.
- Q. So once you -- once he alerted you to the fact that you had a victim very near the front door, what's the next thing that you did?
- A. Dropped the hoseline. She was close enough that we could gain access to her. There was no need for the hoseline. So we made entry into the kitchen area and we just brought her outside.
- 25 Q. Okay.

```
MR. ROUSSEAU:
                                Your Honor, may I step around
1
2
    here just for a moment?
3
                THE COURT: Yes, you may.
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) If I am standing in the front
4
5
    door, standing ready to enter the apartment front door,
    okay, I guess you would be inside the apartment, where
6
7
    in relation to my location would this victim have been?
8
       Α.
           Probably halfway between me and you.
9
       Q.
           Okav.
                 Would she have been directly ahead of --
10
    directly between me and you? Would she have been off to
11
    the left or off to the right?
12
       Α.
           Directly in line with me.
13
       Q.
           Okay. And that's where you found her?
14
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
15
       Q.
           Okay. Did you -- were you able -- while you were
16
    still inside the apartment with her, were you able to
17
    notice anything, anything about her condition?
18
       Α.
           Yes.
19
       Q.
           What was that?
20
           For starters, she was not clothed. And then once
       Α.
21
    we started dragging her out of the apartment, I made --
22
    I noticed that there was blood, which I did not expect.
23
    My initial, I guess, thought was that maybe she had been
24
    overcome by smoke and that's why she was down in the
25
    kitchen. While we were dragging her out, I noticed
```

```
there was blood. I remembered thinking that that was
odd. And then didn't think anything else past that
because of what else transpired.
   Q.
       So you began dragging her out, I assume with the
help of your partner?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
       Did you get her all the way outside?
   Q.
   Α.
       We got her to the threshold of the front door.
   Q.
       And what happened at the threshold of the front
door?
   Α.
       We passed her off to another crew that was
outside.
       Did you have to set her down for a minute to do
   Q.
that?
       Yes, sir.
   Α.
   Q.
       So there was another team of firefighters just
outside the door?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
```

- Q. And when she -- you handed her off to them, what's the next thing that you did then?
 - A. We took the hoseline and went back inside to a...
- Q. That's the thing you had -- were originally prepared to do, correct?
- A. Yes, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

Q. So you went back to your original responsibility?

A. Yes, sir.

- Q. All right. By this time did you have -- had you turned on your air supply?
- A. The air supply was already on when we made entry to drag her out.
- Q. Okay. Thank you. About -- what's the extent of the air supply, how long do you have? I guess does it depend on the amount of physical activity you're doing?
- A. It does. It -- the air bottles that we wear are rated for 30 minutes. That's sitting still, breathing slowly and controlled breathing. Typically on a working fire, adrenaline is running, we're breathing fast, we're working, they're probably good for 15 minutes.
- Q. All right. So you grab the hose and you went into the apartment. Once you were able to get in there and start seeing the conditions that existed, what did you see?
- A. We encountered a lot of smoke and heat in the front living room area. Zero visibility. The heat was moderate. We made our way back to the hallway leading to the back bedroom, and that's where we entered a lot of fire and a lot of heat.
 - Q. You say "we," who was with you?
- A. My partner on engine eight.
- Q. Do you remember that partner's name?

Α. Yes, sir. 1 Who was that? 2 Q. 3 A.J. Keeling. Α. A.J. Keeling? Ο. 4 5 Α. Keeling, yes, sir. Would that be K-E-E-L-I-N-G? Q. 6 7 That's correct. Α. 8 Q. And were -- was an Officer Kornegay with you, 9 also, that night? 10 Α. Firefighter Kornegay on that particular incident 11 was on Quint 8, which is a separate fire apparatus. 12 Q. And is he with you here today? 13 Α. He is. And I don't mean with you, but --14 Q. 15 Yes, sir. Α. 16 Q. -- you guys were sitting in the back together? Yes, sir. 17 Α. 18 And Firefighter Kornegay was on a second -- I'm Q. 19 going to call it a truck, but you call it a separate 20 piece of equipment? 21 Α. Yes, sir. 22 Was he there fighting the fire inside that 23 apartment at the same time you were? 24 At one point, yes, but that's not his initial. 25 His initial responsibilities are different from what our

1 responsibilities were. 2 Okay. Well, we'll talk to him in a minute 3 about --Α. Okay. 4 5 Q. -- about his responsibilities. But you do recall seeing him there that night? 6 7 Α. Yes, sir. 8 Q. Okay. Once you were able to -- your hoseline was 9 running in the front door, correct? 10 Α. Yes, sir. 11 Did you -- where did you first encounter fire Q. that you actually had to utilize that firehose in order 12 13 to knock the fire down? It was in that hallway leading to the back 14 Α. 15 bedroom. 16 Q. And after that, where did you progress, where did 17 you proceed to? 18 We stayed in that hallway for, I'd say probably, 19 about a minute to two minutes fighting fire before we 20 could knock it down enough to move into the back 21 bedroom. And that -- is that just you with your firehose 22 Q. or was there another one going, that you were aware of, 23 24 by then?

That was me with my partner on one hose and at

25

Α.

that same time, another hoseline had come in from a different bedroom window with another crew who was also attacking that fire.

- Q. So there are two firehoses now running inside this apartment, correct?
 - A. That's correct.

- Q. Would you call it a large apartment?
- A. I wouldn't say large.
- Q. The area where you were paused having to fight this fire, describe it for us.
- A. We had had to fight some furniture coming in to get to that point. There was a --
- Q. What does that mean?
 - A. Well, with zero visibility, it's sometimes difficult, as it is, just trying to make way around the unit. There's couches, there's tables, there's -- you know, depending on what they have in the unit, sometimes it can be difficult to get -- maneuver past all that stuff. You have to kind of feel around and use your senses to figure out what it is and what -- where it is. So, you know, it takes us a second to, if we bump into a couch, to figure out which way it's going and maneuver around it. On top of that, we can't see and we've got a hoseline that we're dragging in, as well, so...
 - Q. All right. So the area where you were, where you

were having to stop and knock the fire down before you could do anything else, describe that for us.

- A. That area is probably halfway between the front door and the hallway. If you're walking in the unit from the front door, the living room -- living room opens to the right. On the left, I believe, there was a bar that kind of comes out from the kitchen. And right there in that little walkway, there's a couch, I think, that was sitting there, that we had run into.
- Q. Okay. Is that where you had to pause to fight the fire?
- A. Negative.

- Q. Okay. Where was that?
 - A. That was once we made it past the couch into the hallway to the bedroom, going to the right, that's where we stopped to fight fire.
- 17 Q. Okay. You were in a -- it sounds like it was a 18 fairly enclosed space?
 - A. Uh-huh. Yeah. It's kind of a small hallway area where it comes in from the living room. It breaks off to another bedroom and then the little hallway going to the back bedroom.
 - Q. The little hallway going to the back bedroom, were you able to proceed down that hallway?
 - A. Yes.

- Q. And what did you find when you got down there?
- A. We found that there wasn't a door where there should have been a door. I believe that door burned off. And then once we got into the bedroom, there was -- we noticed some tracking on the right-hand side of the bedroom, which we figured out later was where was a closet had been.
- Q. You say "tracking," you mean like metal tracking attached to the floor?
- A. That's correct, where maybe a sliding door had been on the tracking, but there were no doors. So pretty sure those had burned off. Everything in that back room had burned off, as far as the doors go.
- Q. Were there any identifiable structures left in that back room?
 - A. Negative.

- Q. How long did it take -- well, were you able to knock the fire down completely, I mean at least sufficiently to be able to go in and out of the house safely before running out of the oxygen, or did you have to go and replenish?
 - A. We were able to do it on our first tank.
- Q. There's a term in your report -- I say -- I'm calling it your report. It's actually a narrative that you typed up. There's a term called "hydraulic

ventilation". Can you tell us what that means?

A. Uh-huh. There's a couple different types of ventilation. The most noticeable -- I don't know if you've ever seen -- is firefighters just basically setting a fan in the front door, you open a front door and you open a back door, or a back window, or some sort of opening, turn the fan on and it ventilates the structure or the compartment that we're working in. That's mechanical ventilation, is what we consider it.

Hydraulic ventilation, what he's referring to, is actually using our hoseline with the water and the nozzle to ventilate a structure. So what we do is go to a window, which we went to the back window in the back bedroom, open up your nozzle and basically flow water out the window. You open up your pattern as to a wide kind of fog and what that does is it sprays water out the window and the air movement comes in from behind and creates a Venturi effect and pulls the air -- draws the air out of the room that you're in. That's hydraulic ventilation. Maybe we don't have time to wait for somebody to set a fan. We can do it real quick right there where we are and it quickly betters the conditions for us inside in what we're trying to do.

Q. Is this something you do after you've got the fire knocked down a bit?

because it interferes a lot with airflow.

A. That's correct.

- Q. And it essentially clears the area of the smoke?
- A. That's correct. Yeah. We do that after the fire. We don't do it before we put water on the fire. And reason for that is we can draw the fire in the wrong direction if we don't have a good hold on the fire yet,
- Q. You've already told us that you passed the female victim off to another team of firefighters and then you went back to fighting the fire. Did you have any more responsibilities regarding the female victim?
- A. Once we passed her off to the other crew, we were -- our job with her was complete.
- Q. Did you have an occasion to check on her status while you were there on scene, whether it was your responsibility or not?
- A. We didn't have -- we weren't assigned to check on her or any job specifically with her. I just -- I do remember, you know, talking with other crews as we came out and them telling us what they had -- you know, what had progressed with her after we had brought her out.
- Q. You are trained at -- in addition -- you already told us, in addition to being a firefighter, you are also a trained paramedic, correct?
- 25 A. Yes, sir.

1 Q. And an EMT? 2 Α. Yes, sir. 3 And as -- in that capacity would it be your Q. responsibility, under other circumstances, to try to 4 save the life of a victim such as her? 5 Α. Yes, sir. 6 7 Have you done that on other occasions? Q. 8 Α. Yes, sir. 9 Q. And do you know whether or not that was done on 10 this occasion? 11 I don't know the specifics of what was done with her once we handed her off. 12 13 Q. Do you know if lifesaving measures were attempted? 14 15 I honestly don't know. I honestly don't know 16 what they did once --You were occupied, weren't you? 17 Q. 18 Α. Yeah, I was. Yes, sir. 19 Q. Okay. 20 MR. ROUSSEAU: May I approach, Your Honor? 21 THE COURT: Yes. 22 Q. (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) I'm going to show you what I've had marked as State's Exhibit No. 3. You recognize 23 this chart? 24 25 A. Yes, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q. You had a chance to look at this earlier down today in my office; is that correct? Α. Yes, sir. Q. Do you recognize this as a diagram showing the layout of the apartment that we've been talking about? Α. Yes, sir. Q. Okay. Other than the fact that it may or may not be to scale, does it fairly and accurately depict the general layout of the apartment? Α. Yes, sir. Q. And does it show the locations that you've been describing in your testimony so far? Α. Yes, sir. Do you recognize the various -- the -- there Q. aren't very many labels on here, but do you recognize the locations, less indicated by the labels, as being accurate? A. Yes, sir. MR. ROUSSEAU: Your Honor, I will offer State's Exhibit No. 3, subject to any objection by Defense. MR. MOORE: Judge, we don't have any objection. THE COURT: All right. State's 3 is admitted.

```
(State's Exhibit No. 3 admitted)
1
2
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Can you see this, Engineer
    Arias?
3
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
4
5
       Q.
           Can you see this okay?
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
6
7
           There's a yellow button right in the middle of
       Q.
8
    that --
9
                 THE COURT: Do you see that? That makes
10
    the laser point --
11
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) -- remote --
                 THE COURT: Yeah.
12
13
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Why don't you point it out
    over there and test it out. I think you'll find that
14
15
    the laser works. Okay.
                 THE COURT: There you go.
16
            (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Why don't you point out for us
17
       Q.
18
    the location of the front door.
19
       Α.
           The front door is right here.
20
           Okay. And where did you find the victim in
       Q.
    relation to that front door?
21
22
       Α.
           The victim was right here in the kitchen.
23
       Q.
           Okay. So the door is here, so right -- pretty
    much dead ahead?
24
25
       A. Yes, sir.
```

- Okay. And you said your partner had some sort of Q. a tool that he swept -- did a sweep of the floor and that's how he found her, correct? Α. Correct. Was it that -- were the conditions that Q. black inside there that you could not see that far in front of you without using a tool? Α. That's correct. Q. So you guys were essentially blind at that point? Α. Correct.
- 11 Q. All right. So would this be the same door -- I'm 12 pointing now to the door you just pointed at, correct?
 - Α. That's correct.
 - Would this be the same -- would that be the Ω. threshold where you had to set her down --
 - That's --Α.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

13

14

15

16

21

- -- while you handed her off to another team? 17 Q.
- 18 Α. That's correct.
- 19 Q. Now, out here in the parking lot there's -- the word "decedent" is written. Does that accurately show 20 the location where she ultimately came to be laid in the 22 parking lot?
- 23 Α. That's correct.
 - Okay. You saw her there after you were able --Q.
- 25 Α. I did.

```
-- to step back and catch your breath?
1
       Q.
2
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
3
           Okay. Wait for me to finish because she's having
       Q.
4
    trouble taking us both --
5
       Α.
           I'm sorry.
       Q.
           -- down.
6
7
                You're doing great, but it's not a normal
8
    conversation. You have to take turns. Let's see.
9
    Point on here, if you would, the area where you had to
10
    pause to knock that fire down, you said for a minute,
11
    minute and a half, before you could proceed any farther.
    Where was that?
12
13
       Α.
           That was right here.
14
       Q.
           Right in there. Okay. I see the words "dryer
    and washer", and that's just so -- it would be just to
15
16
    the right of that as you're facing this chart?
17
       A. Right and down enough that we could look down the
18
    hallway.
19
                JUROR:
                         Judge --
20
                THE COURT: I'm sorry.
21
                JUROR: -- we're having trouble seeing --
22
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Oh --
23
                THE COURT: You're blocking --
24
                JUROR: -- with the --
25
                THE COURT: -- the projector.
```

```
1
                JUROR:
                       -- projector.
2
                MR. ROUSSEAU:
                                I'll move this.
3
                THE COURT: Yeah. Why don't you pull it up
4
    closer.
             That's a good idea.
5
                 (Pause in proceedings)
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Step down here, Engineer.
6
7
    Yeah, that -- you're in a good enough spot.
                Point out for us, please, the location then
8
9
    where you were having to -- where you had to stop to
10
    fight -- to knock the fire down before going any
    further.
11
12
       Α.
           It would have been here.
13
           Right in there. Okay. Now, there's a big space
       Q.
    right here in the lower right-hand, I guess, as you're
14
    facing it and then there's a big open space in the lower
15
16
    left-hand as you're facing it. It would be -- the
17
    left-hand would be west, the right-hand would be east,
18
    according to this little diagram.
19
                Where -- did one of these rooms seem to be
20
    the point of origin for the fire?
21
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
22
           And how can you tell the point of origin?
       Q.
23
       Α.
           It was where the majority of the body of the fire
24
    was.
25
           Is -- and which room was that?
       Q.
```

A. This one.

- Q. Okay. You're pointing to the area -- the room on the west side, according to this diagram, correct?
 - A. That's correct.
- Q. Now, there's a line, a green line, that runs across that room at the top of that room, the north end of that room. What would that line indicate?
- A. That line is the metal track that we saw when we came in the room, where the sliding closet doors may have been.
- Q. And there's a detail on the drawing right here, again on the far western wall, right in the middle of the wall. It appears to be a little bit thick -- the line appears to be thicker than the others. Would you tell me what that line might indicate?
- A. That line is the exterior window to that bedroom where we performed the hydraulic ventilation.
- Q. That's the window where you were spraying water out at a high rate to draw that smoke out, correct?
 - A. That's correct.
 - Q. Did it work?
- 22 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Do you recall any -- does anything about this open area outside of the bedroom, do you remember anything that might have been going on out there?

- A. No, sir.
- Q. Okay. Thank you. You can have a seat.
- A. Sure.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

18

19

22

23

24

- Q. Officer, do you recall how many pieces of equipment were ultimately dispatched to this scene? If you don't, that's fine.
- A. I can tell you what was dispatched initially.

 It's -- our initial response procedures are one ladder truck -- at the time, one ladder truck, a battalion chief, three engines -- I'm sorry -- four engines, and that was it.
- 12 Q. Is --
- A. I'm sorry -- excuse me -- they've changed since
 then. So it was about a battalion chief, one ladder
 truck and four engines.
- 16 Q. So that's six different, for lack of a better 17 term, fire trucks?
 - A. Five, with the battalion chief. It's a Suburban with a chief on it, commanding officer.
- Q. And then would the chief be in charge of the whole -- the entire scene?
 - A. That's correct, ultimately.
 - Q. Ultimately. Sounds like you guys have an awful lot of autonomy as you go about your business; is that a fair assessment?

Α. Yes, sir. 1 2 Q. Because you have to because you're in 3 life-threatening situations? Α. Yes, sir. 4 5 Q. Thank you very much. MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll pass the witness. 6 7 THE COURT: Defense may cross. 8 CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. MOORE: 9 10 Engineer Arias, you testified that your fire Q. 11 station is just minutes away from the fire or where the apartment was on fire, correct? 12 13 A. Yes, sir. You -- in your report you're dispatched at 14 2211 hours and you arrived at the fire at 2214 hours; is 15 16 that correct? I don't know the exact numbers. That sounds 17 18 correct. 19 Q. That's in your report. I mean... 20 Α. Yes, sir. 21 Q. Okay. So it took about 13 minutes from the call 22 being dispatched to you arriving? 23 Α. Three. 24 My math again. Three minutes. Q. 25 Yes, sir. Α.

- So y'all are there just -- I mean, three minutes 1 Q. 2 is nothing, isn't it? I mean, that quick. 3 Yes, sir. Α. And if the call had come in at ten after, Ω. 4 5 then -- well, I guess my point is this. You're the first one on the scene, correct? 6 7 Α. Correct. And the door is already opened and the body --8 Q. 9 you find the body of Mechelle Gandy in the kitchen, correct? 10 11 Α. Correct. 12 Q. Is -- are -- is she laying with her feet out towards the door? 13 14 Correct. Α. 15 Q. And her head is laying inside the kitchen? 16 Α. Correct. 17 Okay. You had your hose with you at that point Q. 18 in time when you entered the apartment, correct? 19 Α. Negative. 20 Q. No? 21 We dropped the hoseline at the front door when we 22 realized we had a victim inside the kitchen. 23
 - Q. Right. Right. But you were carrying the hose in?
- A. We left it outside when we made entry to bring

1 her out of the kitchen. Okay. You didn't spray water in there? 2 Q. 3 No, sir. Α. Q. She was brought out within minutes of y'all 4 5 arriving on the scene, correct? 6 Α. Correct. 7 And is it standard procedure to hand -- if you Q. 8 find somebody, to hand them off to some other 9 firefighters to take them out? 10 That's not a standard procedure. Every scenario 11 is different. That's just what worked best for that particular scenario. 12 13 Okay. But as far as you know, she was in the Q. same condition when she was brought out and laid there 14 in the parking lot, nothing had changed about her 15 16 condition? Her responsiveness, is that what you're asking? 17 Α. 18 Q. Yeah. 19 Α. Correct, nothing changed. 20 And besides you -- you and your fellow Q. 21 firefighters carrying her, I assume by her arms and 22 legs? That's correct. 23 Α.

and nobody disturbed her in any way?

She was removed from that apartment immediately

24

25

Q.

Α. Correct. 1 2 Q. Okay. You went further into the apartment and 3 that's when you encountered flames, when you got into the hall? 4 Correct. 5 Α. 6 Q. Correct. That's when you started using any kind 7 of water to douse the fire out? 8 Α. Correct. 9 Q. Okay. Thank you. 10 Oh, do you know if -- was she laying 11 facedown or face up when she was --12 Α. She was laying supine, which is face up. 13 Q. Face up? Α. Correct. 14 15 Q. Thank you, sir. I'll pass the witness. 16 MR. MOORE: MR. ROUSSEAU: I have no further questions, 17 18 Your Honor. 19 THE COURT: All right. May this witness be 20 permanently excused? 21 MR. ROUSSEAU: As far as we're concerned, 22 yes, Your Honor. 23 MR. MOORE: Yes. 24 THE COURT: All right. You're released from 25 the trial. You're not on call, but you can't talk to

```
1
    anyone about what goes on here until you find out the
    trial is over.
2
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
3
                THE COURT: Thanks for coming in.
4
5
                 (Witness excused from courtroom)
                THE COURT: You may call and identify your
6
7
    next witness.
8
                MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll try to get the term --
9
    the title right, Your Honor, but it's Firefighter
10
    Kornegay.
                THE COURT: Off the record.
11
12
                 (Discussion off the record)
13
                 (Witness takes the stand)
                THE COURT: State your full, legal name out
14
15
    loud for the court reporter, and if she needs spellings,
    she'll ask.
16
17
                THE WITNESS: Robert Daniel Kornegay.
18
                THE REPORTER: Could you spell your last
19
    name?
                THE WITNESS: K-O-R-N-E-G-A-Y.
20
21
                THE COURT: Thank you.
22
                And face me and raise your right hand.
23
                 (One witness sworn)
24
                THE COURT: All right. Put your hand down.
25
                Have you ever testified before?
```

THE WITNESS: 1 No, sir. 2 THE COURT: All right. There's rules you 3 have to know about and they will apply any time you 4 testify in a district court. The first rule is you may 5 only be in the courtroom when you are actually testifying. You cannot sit in the courtroom and listen 6 7 to other witnesses when they testify. Clear? 8 THE WITNESS: Okay. 9 THE COURT: All right. Rule two, you cannot 10 talk to other witnesses, whether you know them or 11 they're strangers, about anything you or they know about 12 anything that has to do with what's being asked about in 13 court. You cannot discuss your testimony with other 14 witnesses. Still clear? 15 16 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 17 THE COURT: You may speak in private with 18 the attorneys for either side or their investigators or 19 staffs about what you know so they can be prepared to 20 know what questions to ask you in court, but you must 21 make sure other witnesses cannot overhear your 22 conversations with the lawyers. Still clear? 23 24 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. 25 THE COURT: Make sure you hear and

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
understand the questions asked. And if you can't hear
or don't understand what you're being asked, look them
in the eye and say so. They'll rephrase it. If you do
understand the question, answer that a question, stop,
wait for the next question. Don't just keep talking.
Do not explain something unless you're asked to explain.
There can always be a followup question.
            THE WITNESS:
                          Okay.
            THE COURT: All good?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT: All right. These rules stay in
effect until the trial is over, which will be a couple
of weeks, even if you're allowed to leave after your own
testimony.
            So keep that in mind. Thanks for coming in.
            All right.
                        Kevin.
            MR. ROUSSEAU:
                           Thank you, Judge.
                    ROBERT KORNEGAY,
having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
                   DIRECT EXAMINATION
BY MR. ROUSSEAU:
   Q.
       You are Robert Kornegay, correct?
       Yes, sir.
   Α.
   Q.
       Would you, please -- what is your current rank
within the Arlington Fire Department?
       I'm an engineer apparatus operator.
   Α.
```

- Q. Okay. I'm having to get used to -- I'm used to talking to police officers so if I say "officer," please bear with me. $A. \quad 0 kay.$
- Q. How long have you been with Arlington Fire Department, sir?
- A. Just over seven years.
 - Q. Were you a firefighter anywhere else before that?
 - A. Yes, sir.
- 10 Q. Where else?

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

- A. I started off with the Ranger Fire Department and then Forest Hill and then Mansfield.
- Q. That sounds like definite progression upward to me.
- 15 A. Thank you.
- 16 Q. And you've been with Arlington for seven years?
- 17 A. Yes, sir.
- 18 Q. So altogether how many years as a firefighter?
- 19 A. Almost 16.
- Q. And are -- do you have any other certifications
 that come into play in your job?
- A. I do special operations within the department. I
 do trench rescue, high and low rescue, confined space
 rescue, swift water rescue, dive rescue, hazmat.
- 25 Q. Sounds like --

- A. And structural collapse.
- Q. Sounds like you have an extremely dangerous job, and I want to talk to you about exactly the things you did in connection with that job on one night in particular.

I want to turn your attention to March the 20th of 2011. Were you assigned to a particular fire station that night?

A. Station 8.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

16

17

18

21

22

Q. And is that -- and where in -- this -- we're talking about an incident that happened in an apartment called Presidents Corner -- apartment complex called Presidents Corner.

How far from Presidents Corner would Station

8 have been?

- A. Maybe just over a mile. Just down the road.
- Q. Pretty quick?
- A. Pretty quick.
- Q. Pretty quick. Do you recall receiving a dispatch to go to that location?
 - A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Do you recall about what time that was?
- A. Just after 10:00 o'clock at night.
- Q. And what -- how did you get from the fire station to the location of the fire?

- A. I was riding backwards, getting dressed, ready to go to the fire. I didn't watch the driver.

 Q. That's what I meant. How -- you were transported there, you rode on a fire truck, correct?

 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. What type of engine were you driving -- what type of truck were you on?
 - A. I was on Quint 8, which is a ladder truck.
 - Q. Quint 8?
 - A. Yes, sir.

7

8

9

10

13

14

15

16

18

24

- 11 Q. So when you got to the fire, the location of the 12 fire, was there -- well, let me back up just a moment.
 - While you were en route to the fire, did you -- were you able to make any observations? Could you see any smoke coming the -- any smoke in the direction you were headed?
- 17 A. I didn't look that way.
 - Q. Didn't really have time, did you?
- 19 A. No, sir.
- Q. Once you got there, what were your initial observations?
- A. There was fire coming out of the unit, the apartment unit that was affected, and smoke.
 - Q. Where did you -- where did this fire -- where was the fire coming from, what part of the structure?

- A. You could see it from the front windows we passed and then the front door.
- Q. What did you do when you first got there? What were your initial responsibilities?
- A. Search and rescue is our first responsibility on that.
- Q. So did you take a -- did you grab a firehose and run it to the door -- house yourself?
 - A. No, sir.
 - Q. So you had a different responsibility?
- 11 A. Yes, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

14

16

17

18

19

20

21

- 12 Q. Did you have a partner, or were you working 13 alone?
 - A. There were two of us.
- 15 Q. And -- so tell us what you actually did.
 - A. When we got off the rig, we were walking up to the door and heard some bystanders talking to us and telling us that there was a -- potentially a mother and a baby inside and if there was a baby, where that baby was at. We walked up to the door -- the door was already opened and we went in, pushed the door open.
- 22 There was smoke about halfway down and then --
 - Q. When you say halfway down, what --
- 24 A. Halfway --
- 25 Q. -- could you explain to the jury what you're

talking about?

- A. Halfway from the ceiling to the floor.
- Q. Okay. So getting into the range of below the level of your head, correct?
 - A. Correct.
- Q. All right.
 - A. Then we started a right-handed search, which --
 - Q. What does that mean?
- A. Means when we walk in the door, we stay on a wall because the visibility is so poor in there that you -- and without a hoseline, we have no way getting back out without knowing where we're oriented in the -- inside the structure. So we start down a wall and we stay on that wall or stay close to each other so that we have a way to get back out if we had to, all we have to do is turn around, or essentially follow the right hand, to go back to the door.
- Q. So unless you do something like that, unless you keep to the right -- keep your hand -- essentially keeping your hand on the wall, correct?
- A. Correct.
- Q. If you don't do that or if you don't have a firehose to track your way back out, you can actually get lost even inside a small structure?
- 25 A. Very easy.

- Q. Why is that?
- A. Because if you get -- you can't see. Pretty simple. I mean...
 - Q. It's smoke, correct?
- A. Correct.

- Q. And also nighttime, correct?
- A. Correct.
 - Q. All right. So you went inside and you're doing a right-handed search. What's the first room that you recall observing?
 - A. It appeared to be a living room. There was some sofas in there, a fireplace, and like a sliding glass door. And that was the only room that we made it to on the initial entry before we made it to the hallway.
 - Q. When you got to the hallway, what did you -- did something cause you to stop?
 - A. The heat picked up when we got to the hallway. It feels like just -- just more heat coming at you. And then there was a lot of fire right there and so we got down even lower, we were crawling, and had to stop a couple feet into that. The fire got lower to the ground and paint -- you could see the paint on the wall was bubbling and kind of the steam or off-gassing of the carpet was coming up.
 - Q. So from where you were, can you tell us what

```
1
    we -- we've had the opportunity to see a diagram by now
2
    so we have --
3
       Α.
           Okay.
            -- some familiarity with the layout. And I'll
4
5
    show it to you in a minute.
                 But where approximately would you have been
6
7
    when you were on your hands and knees?
8
       Α.
            In the hallway just off the living room, right at
9
    the beginning of the hallway.
10
           And you said there was -- the fire was visible,
    the actual flames were visible?
11
12
       Α.
           Yes.
13
           Where were they?
       Q.
           They were above us and coming down, just banking
14
       Α.
15
    down like the smoke would.
           A11 --
16
       Q.
17
       Α.
           From the ceiling --
18
       Q.
           Ceiling high and coming down?
19
       Α.
           Yes.
20
           Okay. And you were on your hands and knees?
       Q.
21
       Α.
           Yes.
22
           And so you've already described -- said that the
       Q.
23
    place was very, very smoky. And this is flames coming
24
    through the smoke?
```

It's flames prior -- yeah, it's going to be what

```
1
    would be prior to the smoke.
 2
       Q.
           Prior to the smoke?
 3
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
           And you said something about the carpet. Explain
 4
 5
    that again.
6
           Whenever synthetics melt or get to a certain
       Α.
 7
    temperature, they start to off-gas and it's right before
8
    they combust.
9
       Q.
           So --
10
       Α.
            So you can see that.
           -- you can see these gases coming off of the
11
       Q.
12
    carpet?
13
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
14
           What does it look like?
       Q.
15
            Look likes steam or like a light smoke coming
       Α.
16
    off.
17
       Q.
           When you have -- when those gases come into
18
    contact with flame, open flame, what happens?
19
       Α.
            It's about to be -- about to flashover.
20
       Q.
           And what does that mean?
21
       Α.
            That means all the room, that whole area and
```

- Q. Including you?
- Α. Including us.

23

24

25

When you see flames coming down the wall and you Q.

contents would be fully engulfed in flames.

see gases coming off the carpet, how long do you have before everything starts into a fireball?

A. Seconds.

- Q. What did you do when you saw this condition?
- A. We -- I grabbed my partner and we backed up, got back to the living room.
- Q. When you get back to the living room, did you note -- did anything catch your attention?
- A. We were down low enough and could see the crew working at the door and we headed straight towards the door instead of following the wall back out. And when we got there, there was a crew removing the body.
- Q. Did you have any opportunity to make any observations of that body?
 - A. I know that there was a minimum amount of clothing on the body and then that crew was dragging her out.
 - Q. What did you do next?
 - A. I went to another entry point, which was a front window, where I could see flames visible from and I took my tool and broke out the window. Got in --
 - Q. What kind of a tool?
 - A. It's called a New York hook. It's about a four-foot-long steel hook that has some different pry points on it so we can force entry or aid us and assist

with search. Grabbed an additional hoseline off the engine so that we could push the flames back to try to make it to the back bedroom where the baby was reported.

- Q. You said you grabbed an additional hoseline. Did you go in through that window that you talked about breaking out?
 - A. Yes, sir.

- Q. When you get inside the apartment, did you -- with that secondary -- second hoseline, was there -- did you come into contact with the other firefighters who are already in there with a hose?
- A. Not initially. But we did a quick search on that room there, where we look under the bed, over the top, and the closets and so forth and then try to push back towards the back bedroom. Then we came in contact with them in the hallway.
- Q. So you searched the room that you initially made entry in from the outside?
 - A. On our second entry, yes.
 - Q. Okay. Did you have an opportunity while the fire was still -- and still going strong -- did you have an opportunity to see the fire in the back bedroom?
 - A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Describe what you saw.
- 25 A. It was flames from the ceiling to the floor, wall

to wall. It was almost like daylight there was so much fire.

- Q. How did you manage to get the fire under control or put out?
- A. Well, we took both hoselines and the engine crew was pushing back the fire towards that back bedroom and putting it out. We got into the hallway and the heat was so much that my partner and I got into the bathroom adjacent -- just right on the other side of the wall from the bedroom while they put more water on it to try to cool it down more so we could get in there and search. We didn't know if we were going to be able to make entry with them there or if they would be able to hold back. So we started to breach that wall to try to make another entry point to that room.
 - Q. What do you mean by "breach that wall"?
- A. Started breaking the Sheetrock to get through the bathroom to the room.
- Q. Was it -- ultimately was it necessary to utilize that hole to go into the other room?
 - A. It could have been.
- Q. Were they able to get the fire under control before that became necessary?
- A. Yes.

Q. Were -- at any one time were there two firehoses

- 1 running into that bedroom? When I say running in, I 2 mean spraying water into that bedroom? 3 Α. Yes. Ω. A lot of water comes out of a firehose, right? 4 5 Α. Yes, sir. And they had sprayed water also in the hallway; 6 Q. 7 is that correct? 8 Α. Correct. 9 Q. What about in the front room, in the front -- in 10 the living room, do you know if any water was sprayed in 11 there? 12 Α. I don't know. I would -- I don't know what they 13 did in the front bedroom -- or the front room we come 14 in. 15 How about the front bed -- the bedroom you Q. 16 initially made entry into from the parking lot, did you have to spray any water in there? 17 18 We had to spray water from that bedroom down the Α. 19 hall to get down the hall. 20 Which is obviously not a clean maneuver. Q. Ιt 21 makes a mess, correct? 22 Α. Correct. 23 Q. You said you wanted to get into that back bedroom
 - Q. You said you wanted to get into that back bedroom to continue the search. What were you searching for?
- 25 A. A baby.

```
Q.
           Did you find the baby?
1
           I did not find the baby.
2
       Α.
3
                MR. ROUSSEAU: May I approach the easel,
    Your Honor?
4
5
                THE COURT:
                             Sure.
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Get to you step down just a
6
7
             I would like to -- this is Exhibit No. 3 and
    moment.
8
    it's already in evidence. You can see this is a laser
9
    pointer, this yellow dot, yellow button right there.
10
    Step back a little bit so the jury can see.
11
                And we've already had the benefit of Officer
12
    Arias testifying, so we have an understanding, generally
13
    speaking, of what we're looking at.
                 But would you, please, point out for us the
14
15
    room -- the window through which -- the window that you
16
    had to break out in order to gain entry a second time?
17
       Α.
           This window right here.
18
           Okay. And it's a -- you're pointing to an area
       Q.
19
    on the bottom right-hand side of the diagram and it's
20
    a -- appears to be double lines in an otherwise solid
21
    wall, correct?
22
       Α.
           Correct.
23
       Q.
           Okay.
24
       Α.
           There's two windows there.
25
       Q.
           It indicates the windows. And it's on the far
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

```
east end of the apartment, correct?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
       Okay. And where would the area -- the room that
   Q.
you were talking about that had all the fire in it, the
fire that was from ceiling to the floor and wall to
wall, which room would that have been?
   Α.
       This room right here.
   Q.
       You're pointing to an area on the other end, the
east -- the west end of the apartment, correct?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Was it your understanding that was the baby's
room?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Now, you had a chance to review this in my office
earlier today, correct?
       Yes, sir.
   Α.
       Was there some other structures or some items
   Q.
that you recall that -- being in the apartment that did
not show up on this diagram?
       On this diagram there is -- it's missing a --
   Α.
another sofa somewhere in here. And then the bedroom,
bed -- a big bed was in here. And that's -- and then
right here, while we were going through, the A/C and
```

Okay. Earlier you talked about another sofa and

heating unit fell down on us.

- you were pointing to the area in the top left-hand corner of the diagram that's -- has a fireplace marked in there -- that room, correct?
 - A. Yes, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

18

20

- Q. Okay. And when you said there was a bed that you were calling a bed that was not shown in this diagram, that was in the eastern -- east bedroom where you said you made entry from the -- through the window, correct?
 - A. Yes, sir.
- Q. All right. Now, you said something about this area right here, the hallway adjacent to -- basically adjacent to the washer/dryer area.
- 13 A. Okay.
- Q. What was it you just now talked there, happening there?
- A. The A/C and heating unit fell down, came through the ceiling.
 - Q. So it was in the ceiling and it fell down?
- 19 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Okay. Were you in the room when that happened?
- 21 A. We were in the hall when it happened.
- 22 Q. Did it hit you?
- A. It came down on us. I don't know if it was it or Sheetrock or whatever, but...
 - Q. Okay. Did you end up -- did you receive any

```
1
    injuries the night that this -- you were fighting this
    fire?
 2
 3
       Α.
            This fire burned my ears and my partner's face.
           How severely burned?
       Ω.
 4
 5
       Α.
           Mine were first-degree and his were second.
6
       Q.
            It required medical attention?
 7
           Not for myself.
       Α.
8
       Q.
            Did you get into any kind of trouble for that?
9
       Α.
            No. sir.
10
            Are you supposed to stay in a room that's on fire
       Q.
11
    long enough to get burned yourself?
12
       Α.
           No, sir.
13
           Why did you stay?
       Q.
14
           We had a mission to accomplish, to save a baby.
       Α.
15
       Q.
            Thank you. You can sit down.
16
                 Thank you, Engineer Kornegay.
17
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll pass the witness, Your
18
    Honor.
19
                          CROSS-EXAMINATION
20
    BY MR. MOORE:
21
       Q.
            Do y'all prefer to go by firefighter, engineer?
    What do you prefer?
22
23
       Α.
            Engineer.
24
       Q.
            Engineer?
25
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
```

- I have just a few questions, Engineer Kornegay. 1 Q. 2 You've been a firefighter 16 years in all, correct? 3 Coming up on it, yes, sir. Α. Ο. Been to a lot of fires? 4 5 Α. Yes, sir. Q. They're all dangerous, aren't they? 6 7 Α. Yes, sir. 8 Q. You made a report after this incident, correct? 9 Α. Yes, sir. 10 Q. And have you reviewed that report before you 11 testified here today? 12 Α. Not today, sir. 13 But before you testified, you reviewed it? Q. 14 Α. Yes, sir. 15 The -- I'm -- I have one area I'd like to clear Q. 16 up. You testified that at one point in time you were 17 down on your knees crawling, correct? 18 Α. Yes, sir. 19 Q. Where in the apartment was that? 20 That was from the living room to the hallway. Α. 21 Q. Okay. And I believe you testified -- and that 22 wasn't in your report, though, was it? 23 Α. I'm not sure, sir.
- 25 to clear it up. And you were on your knees, I assume,

Q.

Okay. I just didn't see it in there. I wanted

```
1
    crawling to go into the hall?
2
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
3
       Q.
           And where did you see the gases coming off the
    floor?
4
5
           Right in front of me, in the carpet right in
       Α.
    front of me.
6
7
       Q.
           Which would be in the hall?
8
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
9
       Q.
           Right before the bedroom?
           Right before the first bedroom, it would have
10
       Α.
11
    been.
           Right. And we would call that the --
12
       Q.
           East bedroom.
13
       Α.
14
       Q.
           -- east bedroom?
           Yes, sir.
15
       Α.
16
       Q.
           And I believe you testified that when you saw
    those gases coming up, there was also a whole bunch of
17
18
    smoke from the ceiling to the -- almost to the floor
19
    that just couldn't -- you couldn't see in there,
20
    correct?
21
       Α.
           No, sir. The smoke was in the living room.
22
           Okay. Was there no smoke in the hall?
       Q.
23
       Α.
           No, sir. It was fire.
24
       Q.
           Just fire?
```

Α.

Yes, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

- And I believe you testified that when the fire Q. and gases meet, that's called -- you called that -- it was fixing to... Α. Flashover. Q. A flashover? Α. Yes, sir. Okay. What is a flashover? Q. Α. A flashover is when everything in a room reaches ignition temperature and ignites. Q. Okay. So obviously that area had not reached that point of flashover, correct? Not at the time that we entered. Α. Right. There was still gases coming up and Q. flames coming down that had not met to cause a flashover, right? Correct. Α. Did it ever flashover? Q. Α. Not with me in it. Q. Okay. Did it flashover with you not in it? Α. I'm not aware. Q. Well, y'all were putting the fire out, weren't you?
- A. No, sir. I went back outside the structure and got another hoseline and made entry.
 - Q. Okay. So you don't know whether there was a

```
1
    flashover or not?
           Not at that particular time.
2
3
           Okay. But there was certainly an abundance of
       Q.
    smoke in the other part of the apartment?
4
5
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
       Q.
           Enough where you couldn't breathe?
6
7
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
8
       Q.
           Okay. Thank you.
9
                 MR. MOORE:
                            I'll pass the witness.
10
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I don't have any further
11
    questions, Your Honor.
12
                THE COURT: May this witness be permanently
    excused?
13
14
                                He may, Your Honor.
                MR. ROUSSEAU:
15
                MR. MOORE:
                            He may.
16
                 THE COURT: All right. You're permanently
    excused from these proceedings just subject to those
17
18
    witness rules. Remember who you can and cannot talk to
19
    until you find out the trial is over, which will be
20
    probably several weeks from now.
21
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okay.
22
                THE COURT: And thank you for coming in.
23
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
24
                THE COURT: You're not on call.
25
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okav.
```

```
(Witness excused from courtroom)
1
2
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Judge, may we approach?
3
                THE COURT:
                           Yes.
                (Discussion at the bench, off the record)
4
5
                THE COURT: All right. Y'all go take a
    short stretch break.
6
7
                (Break taken, 3:55 - 4:10 p.m.)
8
                (OPEN COURT, DEFENDANT PRESENT, NO JURY)
9
                THE COURT: Officially, for the record,
10
    state your full, legal name out loud.
11
                THE WITNESS: Lester Warren Hicks.
12
                THE COURT: And if you'll face me and raise
13
    your right hand.
14
                (One witness sworn)
15
                THE COURT: All right. There's certain
16
    rules that apply to all witnesses in a trial. We're
17
    going to bend them a little bit --
18
                THE WITNESS: Okav.
19
                THE COURT: -- out of respect, the lawyers
20
    for both sides have agreed to have family members who
    don't really know anything as far as being witnesses of
21
22
    what happened, to sit and watch the trial as long as
23
    they can keep their emotions together.
24
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okay.
25
                THE COURT: As long as they can sit and
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
listen, keep on their poker face, watch the trial and
not talk to anyone about it unless they're speaking in
private with the DA or defense attorneys or their staff,
but you can't talk to anyone else about what you see or
hear in the courtroom if we let you stay in.
            Can you make that promise, sir?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir. Absolutely.
            THE COURT: Well, here's the rules that
apply to everyone. You can't normally be in the
courtroom when anyone else is testifying. You can only
be here when you do. We're going to let you stay in the
courtroom after your testimony to watch the trial and
sit with the family, as long as you do not talk to
anyone about anything that you see or hear, except in
private with the officers of the court.
            THE WITNESS:
                          Okay.
            THE COURT: Good so far?
            THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
            THE COURT:
                      No witness is allowed to talk to
anyone else about anything they say or hear in the
courtroom, much less anything they know about the case
or the people involved, while the trial is in progress.
That's the rule for everyone, not just for you.
other people don't get the opportunity to see and hear,
so that's where I give you a little bit more of a riot
```

```
1
    act than I just would anyone.
                                    0kay?
                THE WITNESS:
2
                              Okay.
3
                THE COURT: Make sure you hear and
    understand the question asked. And if you can't hear or
4
5
    you don't understand, just say so, but you never wing
    it. You never guess.
6
7
                THE WITNESS:
                              Okav.
8
                THE COURT: If they don't speak plain
9
    English, then you say I'm not sure what your question
10
    is, will you run it by me again. If you do understand
    the question, though, you answer that question, you
11
12
    stop, you wait for the next question.
13
                THE WITNESS:
                              Okay.
                THE COURT: You never talk at the same time
14
15
    as anyone else because her hands can't keep up with it.
    She's good, but she can't type in stereo. Okay?
16
17
                THE WITNESS:
                              Okay.
18
                THE COURT: If someone asks you do you have
19
    a watch, you say yes. If they want to know where you
20
    got it, what time is it or any other stuff, they'll ask
    about your watch. Otherwise, "yes" or "no" if that
21
    answers the question, answer, wait for the question.
22
23
                THE WITNESS: All right.
24
                THE COURT: They can ask all the questions
25
    they need to do their job. It's not going to be a
```

```
1
    problem.
                THE WITNESS: Okay.
2
3
                THE COURT: Do you have any questions about
    these rules?
4
5
                THE WITNESS:
                               No, sir.
                THE COURT: And you promise to follow them?
6
7
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
8
                THE COURT: And they go on until the jury
9
    makes their last decision.
10
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okay.
11
                THE COURT: Even after your testimony.
12
                THE WITNESS:
                               Okay.
13
                THE COURT: So if you want to, you can have
    a seat right here and wait for them to come back in.
14
15
    You can go have a seat by David, do whatever you want.
16
                Off the record.
17
                 (Break taken, 4:08 - 4:15 p.m.)
18
                 (OPEN COURT, DEFENDANT AND JURY PRESENT)
19
                 (Witness on the stand)
20
                THE COURT: You may call and identify your
    next witness.
21
22
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Thank you, Judge. We'll call
    Lester Hicks.
23
24
                THE COURT: And if you will state your name
25
    one more time for Miss Karen and also for the members of
```

```
1
    the jury, please.
2
                THE WITNESS: Lester Hicks.
3
                THE COURT: And, Mr. Hicks, while the jury
    was on break, I brought you into court, swore you in,
4
5
    placed you under rules and all that stuff; is that
6
    correct?
7
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
8
                THE COURT: I guess so the jury is not
9
    confused, one of the rules that most people are under is
    that you can't be in the courtroom to watch the trial,
10
11
    but because of your role in the case and you're an
12
    immediate family member, the parties have agreed that
13
    after your testimony you may remain in the courtroom and
14
    you're not breaking any rule. But you can't talk to
15
    anyone about what you see or hear in the courtroom until
    the trial is over. You understood that?
16
17
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
18
                THE COURT: All right.
                                         Kevin.
19
                           LESTER HICKS,
20
    having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
21
                        DIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MR. ROUSSEAU:
22
       Q.
23
           Good afternoon.
24
       Α.
           Good afternoon, sir.
25
       Q.
           You are Lester Hicks; is that correct?
```

- Α. That's correct. 1 2 Q. Mr. Hicks, what do you do for a living? 3 I'm a supervisor for the DART light rail, Α. 4 maintenance department. What does that mean, exactly? 5 Q. All the maintenance that gets done to the trains, 6 Α. 7 I help bring them in, schedule all the maintenance that 8 gets repaired to them. 9 Q. Before you became a supervisor, what did you do? I was also a mechanic before then on GSA 10 11 equipment, the stuff that the -- loads airplanes. 12 before that, I was also a mechanic. 13 Q. Pretty much been a mechanic your whole life? 14 Α. Yes, sir. 15 Are you originally from Texas? Q. 16 Α. No, sir. I'm originally from California. 17 Q. How long have you lived in Texas? 18 Approximately 22, 24 years, something like that. Α. 19 Q. Did you serve any time in the military? 20 Yes, sir. I served four years in the Marine Α. 21 Corps. 22 Q. How is it that you are connected to Mechelle 23 Gandy and Asher Olivas?

 - Mechelle was my daughter and Asher was my grandson.

- Q. Was Mechelle your natural daughter?
- 2 A. No, sir. She was my stepdaughter.
- Q. And how long -- how -- you referred to her as your daughter?
 - A. Yes, sir.

5

6

9

16

17

- Q. How long were you her father?
- A. Since she was about two and a half, three years old.
 - Q. So you raised her from that age?
- 10 A. Yes, sir.
- 11 Q. And during the time that she was growing up, 12 where did the family live?
- A. We started off in California, but after I joined the Marine Corps, we moved here to Dallas, Fort Worth area.
 - Q. And does -- do you -- does Mechelle have family from her -- that is from her natural father's family still out in California?
- 19 A. Yes, sir. That's correct.
- Q. And are there some family members living in Reno, Nevada, as well?
- 22 A. Yes, sir. That's correct.
- Q. What type of a -- well, first of all, at the time of her death, how old was Mechelle?
- 25 A. Twenty-eight, I believe. I don't know.

```
1
    Twenty-six, I believe.
2
       Q.
           That's okay.
3
       Α.
           Yeah.
       Q.
           I didn't tell you I was going to ask you that.
4
5
    I'm sorry.
                And did she -- you said y'all moved here
6
7
    after just a few years in California. Did she do most
    of her growing up in Arlington?
8
9
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
10
       Q.
           Did she go to Arlington schools?
11
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
12
       Q.
           Did -- was she ever married?
13
       Α.
           No, sir.
           What type of girl was Mechelle?
14
       Q.
15
           Mechelle is, I want to say, a typical teenager.
    She grew up, high school, did typical teenager things.
16
    I had to wake her up, had to get her up to go to school.
17
18
    Make her get up. Make her go. You know, that's --
19
    that -- as -- as a teenager. As she got older, she got
20
    better. I mean, we all do. We all grow up, so...
21
       Q.
           So for those of us with teenagers, there is hope?
22
       Α.
           There is hope.
23
       Q.
           What type of work did Mechelle do?
24
           Mechelle mainly was a -- a waitress and a
25
    bartender.
```

- Q. Do you know if she ever worked any retail jobs?
- A. Yes, at 7-Eleven. She also worked there, too.
 - Q. What part of town -- just generally speaking, what part of town did you and Mechelle's mom live in?
 - A. The southeast part of Arlington.
 - Q. Okay. I'm going to use some -- a lot of us are familiar with some of the major streets there. In relation to, say, New York, where would that -- where would y'all live?
- 10 A. New York where?
- 11 Q. New York Avenue, I'm sorry.
- 12 A. Right. Right. What part of New York Avenue?
- 13 Q. Oh, down -- down in Southeast Arlington.
- 14 A. We lived west of New York Avenue.
- 15 Q. And I'm not trying to get exact.
- 16 A. Right.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

- Q. Did -- the 7-Eleven where Mechelle worked, was that somewhere in that general vicinity?
- 19 A. Yes, sir.
- Q. So we've been talking about Mechelle quite a been. Tell us about Asher.
- 22 A. Very good kid. Very quiet. Always smiling.
- 23 Yeah.
- 24 Q. Did he --
- A. A bundle of joy.

- Did you spend a lot of time with him? 1 Q. 2 Α. Yes. 3 Q. Did he spend time -- did he have a room at your house? 4 5 Α. Yes, sir. Q. Did he have a lot of toys at your house? 6 7 Yes, sir. Α. 8 Q. Were there -- was there a period of time when he 9 and Mechelle actually lived at your house? 10 Α. Yes, sir. 11 Q. Did he have a bed there? 12 Α. I'm sorry? 13 Q. Did he have a bed there? 14 Α. Yes, sir. 15 Can you tell me, did Mechelle have a job working Q. 16 in Grapevine, Texas, as far as you know? 17 Α. Yes, sir. She had a job there, yes. 18 Do you know the name of the place where she Q. 19 worked? 20 She worked at Red Robin at one point and Pluckers 21 at one point.
 - - And what is Pluckers? Q.

23

- Α. It is a wing place. A wing place.
- Q. Did she ever work at a place called Boston's?
- 25 Α. I can't tell you that for sure, sir.

Or do you know if she -- if it was a place that 1 Q. 2 she ever just went to and hung out? 3 I know she went there and hung out. Α. Q. Did she have a -- did she have many friends? 4 Yes, sir, a lot of friends. 5 Α. Q. Pretty large circle of friends? 6 7 Α. Yes, sir. 8 Q. Was she a social person? 9 Α. Absolutely. 10 Q. Did Mechelle ever have any other children? 11 Not that I'm aware of. Α. 12 Q. You were in a position to know? 13 Yes, sir. Α. Asher was her only child? 14 Q. 15 Α. Yes. sir. I want to turn your attention to the time --16 Q. 17 well, let me -- maybe we can just work backward. At the 18 time of the fire, which was March the 20th of 2011, how 19 old was Asher? 20 Α. Just over one year old. 21 Q. If I said 13 months, would that be about right? 22 Yes, sir. Α. 23 Q. So if my math is correct, backing up, that would

have had Mechelle getting pregnant with him sometime in

late spring, early summer of 2009?

24

- Α. Yes, sir. 1 Was she living in your house at that time? 2 Q. 3 Α. Yes, sir. Q. Did you know the father? The -- who was supposed 4 5 to be the father, did you know who that was? Α. I didn't know him personally. I knew his name. 6 7 Q. And what was that? 8 Α. Thomas Olivas. 9 Q. And how did you know that name? 10 Α. Mechelle had told me that. 11 Q. And was there ever a time when -- well, did the 12 fact -- was there any friction between yourself and, I 13 guess, Mechelle's mother -- by the way, what is Mechelle's mother's name? 14 15 Α. Georgia Hicks. 16 Q. Was there any friction between yourself and 17 Georgia and Mechelle that evolved from her pregnancy? 18 Α. Yes, sir. And what was -- describe that for us. 19 Q. 20 Mechelle was living with us whenever she had Α. 21 Asher and me and her mother took care of them, so... 22 Q. You mean financially? Financially and babysitting and feed and -- until 23 Α.
 - A. Financially and babysitting and feed and -- until Mechelle got her job. She was working two jobs as a single mom and we were just thinking that she shouldn't

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

```
be doing that by herself. So we thought the father
should be responsible for helping her so she wouldn't
have to work two jobs and never see her child and us
always being her babysitter. So it definitely caused
friction for us.
      Well, I can understand why it would -- why you
   Q.
would want her to not have to go through all that pain.
But why was -- what was the friction? Was she resistant
to something?
   Α.
      Yes --
            MS. KEENE: Your Honor, I'm going to object
to any hearsay.
            THE COURT: What's your response to her
hearsay objection?
            MR. ROUSSEAU: I can rephrase the question,
Your Honor.
            THE COURT: I'll allow you to do that.
   Q.
       (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Was there anything that you
desired for Mechelle to do in regard to this child?
       Yes, sir. I wanted her to file the proper
   Α.
paperwork to get support from the father.
   Q.
       And did you ever -- was that a part of the -- was
that a source of the friction between you?
   Α.
       Yes, sir. That was a big part of the friction.
```

Was she resistant to that idea?

```
Α.
           Yes, sir.
1
           Was there ever a time before Asher was born when
2
       Q.
3
    you actually met the person you refer to Thomas Olivas?
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
4
           Describe that for us. Tell us about that
5
       Q.
6
    encounter.
7
       Α.
           Which one, the first one or the second one?
8
       Q.
           The first one. The first time you -- and by the
9
    way, you ended up meeting the person, correct?
10
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
11
       Q.
           Do you see that person present in the courtroom
12
    today?
13
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
           Could you point him out and describe something
14
       Q.
    that he's wearing, please?
15
16
           Sitting right here with a blue tie on.
       Α.
17
       Q.
           Okay.
18
       Α.
           At the end of this table.
19
       Q.
           This gentleman right here --
20
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
21
       Q.
           -- that I'm pointing at?
22
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: May the record reflect the
    witness has identified the Defendant?
23
                             The record will reflect he
24
                 THE COURT:
25
    pointed at the Defendant in open court and accurately
```

described his clothing.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

16

17

18

23

24

- Q. (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Where did you meet him and under what conditions?
- A. Met him at the front of my house, and he had come over to talk to Mechelle. That's when I met him.
 - Q. And was this before Asher was born?
- A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Is this a period of time -- was this early in her pregnancy or late?
- A. Yes, sir. It was early in the pregnancy.
 - Q. It was early. Was there ever any possibility of Mechelle not giving birth to that child, that is, ending in -- ending her pregnancy by abortion? Was there ever -- was that ever even a possibility?
- 15 A. Not that I'm aware of, no.
 - Q. When -- you said that you met Thomas early in her pregnancy outside of your house, correct?
 - A. Yes, sir.
- 19 Q. Was it day or night?
- 20 A. It was nighttime, sir.
- Q. And describe the encounter. Tell us what happened.
 - A. That night I had gotten home from work, because I work evening shift and --
 - Q. About what time do you get home -- did you get

home then?

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

14

19

20

21

- Α. Approximately 12:00 o'clock at night.
- Okay. Go ahead. I'm sorry. Q.
 - And typical thing, come in and start winding down from work. Noticed that Mechelle was up getting dressed, which was odd. Started talking to Mechelle to find out what was going on and she let me know that Thomas was coming over to the house, that they were talking about the pregnancy.
- Q. How did that sit with you?
- At that time I thought it was a good thing Α. 12 because I didn't know the person. So at that time, I 13 mean, good, taking care of business.
 - Q. So did you meet him that night?
- 15 Α. Yes, sir.
- 16 Q. Did he come into your home?
- 17 Α. No, sir.
- 18 Where did you meet and talk to him? Q.
 - Α. I went outside and they were -- I have a two-car garage and they were on the farthest north side of the two-car garage, outside by the vehicles, speaking, and that's when I met him.
- 23 Q. Okay. Was the encounter pleasant?
- 24 Yes, sir. The first encounter was pleasant. Α.
- 25 Shook his hand. We introduced each other and I was

- planning on asking him what he was doing there. He said he was there to take care of business.
 - Q. He said he was what?
 - A. He was there to take care of business.
- Q. Do you know what that meant?
 - A. I don't know for sure what it meant, but I was taking it he was there to make arrangements due to the fact that Mechelle was pregnant.
 - Q. Did he give you any understanding or did he explain at all who he was, what he did for a living, anything like that?
- 12 A. No, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

20

- 13 Q. So I take it the conversation was pretty short?
- 14 A. Yes, sir, it was pretty short.
- Q. Did you basically shake hands, introduce yourself and then go back in the house?
- 17 A. That's correct.
- 18 Q. Well, that was early in her pregnancy, right?
- 19 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. When is the next time that you encountered Thomas
 Olivas?
- A. I can't remember for sure of the exact day, but it was a couple of months later. At the house, also.
- Q. Where was that?
- 25 A. At the house, also.

- Q. Same sort of situation?
- 2 A. Sort of. I mean, me and Mechelle were talking.
- 3 At this time I had came home and me and Mechelle were
- 4 talking on the couch and all of sudden she received a
- 5 text and she pretty much just ended our conversation and
- 6 was anxious. And I was trying to find out what was
- 7 going on. And as it turned out, Thomas was coming over
- 8 again that night.

9

- Q. Did that trouble you in any way?
- A. Yes, because of the timing. Yes, sir.
- 11 Q. What do you mean "the timing"?
- A. It was closer to 2:00 o'clock in the morning at
- 13 that point.
- 14 Q. And did he -- when he came over, did he come up
- 15 and knock on the door?
- 16 A. No, sir.
- 17 Q. How did you know that he was there?
- 18 A. Mechelle had went outside to meet him.
- 19 Q. Did you go outside and meet him, also?
- 20 A. At first I didn't. After a little bit, I did go
- 21 out there.
- 22 Q. Why did you go out there?
- A. Because I didn't like the fact that he came to my
- 24 house at 2:00 o'clock in the morning.
- Q. Did you explain that to him when you went out

```
1
    there?
2
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
3
           How did you explain that to him?
       Q.
            I asked Mr. Olivas that if he did not have enough
       Α.
4
5
    respect for my daughter to come in the daytime, that he
6
    shouldn't come to -- excuse my language -- but don't
7
    come to my fucking house at 2:00 o'clock in the morning.
8
       Q.
           That's fine. And, by the way, here, you can use
9
    the language that happened, that you used at the time.
10
    That's okay.
11
       Α.
           Okay.
12
       Q.
           It sounds like you were a little angry?
13
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
14
           And how did he respond when you said that?
       Q.
15
           He responded that that's the only time he could
       Α.
    come because he had school and he had to work.
16
       Q.
           He said he was in school?
17
18
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
19
       Q.
           Did he say where he was in school?
20
           No, sir.
       Α.
21
       Q.
           Did he say what type of job he had?
22
           No, sir.
       Α.
23
       Q.
           Did he say what hours -- what his hours were?
24
       Α.
           No, sir.
25
       Q.
           Just that he goes to school and he goes to work
```

```
1
    and this is the only time he can come?
 2
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
 3
       Q.
           How long did that encounter between the two of
    you last?
 4
            Less than five minutes.
 5
       Α.
6
       Q.
           Have you pretty much described the conversation
 7
    for us?
           Yes, sir.
8
       Α.
9
       Q.
            Did it get heated? Was there ever any chance of
10
    it turning into a fight or anything like that?
11
       Α.
           No. sir.
12
       Q.
           Was there ever another time when you came into
    contact with him?
13
14
       Α.
           No. sir.
15
       Q.
            So Mechelle at that time was still pregnant?
16
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
           Farther along, obviously?
17
       Q.
18
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
19
       Q.
           And Asher had not yet been born?
20
       Α.
           No, sir.
21
       Q.
            So did Mechelle continue to live at your house
22
    throughout her pregnancy?
23
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
24
            Did -- to your knowledge, to your knowledge, did
       Q.
25
    Thomas Olivas come to your house any more while she was
```

```
1
    pregnant?
            Not that I'm aware of.
 2
       Α.
 3
       Q.
            To your knowledge, did Mechelle meet him anywhere
 4
    away from your house?
            Not that I'm aware of.
 5
       Α.
       Q.
            It was not reported to you?
6
 7
           No, sir.
       Α.
8
       Q.
           Did she ever -- I'll pass on that.
9
                 Before Asher was born, how many jobs was
10
    Mechelle working?
11
       Α.
            Two, I believe.
12
       Q.
            Did she continue working two jobs after he was
    born?
13
14
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
15
       Q.
           And she continued living at your house?
           Yes, sir.
16
       Α.
            Did -- to your knowledge, did Mechelle ever
17
       Q.
18
    receive any financial support from Thomas?
19
       Α.
            No, sir.
20
       Q.
            Was there ever a time when Mechelle actually
21
    moved out of your house with Asher?
22
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
23
       Q.
            And when was that?
24
       Α.
            It would have been, I believe, around November,
25
    December of 2012, I believe.
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
And what was the reason for her moving out?
   Q.
   Α.
       Not '12. It was the child support thing. She
would -- just never acted on trying to get the paperwork
done and it turned into, you know, as you said, friction
and she opted to move out.
       Okay. You and your wife basically took a hard
   Q.
line and said this is something you must do?
   Α.
       Yes, sir.
   Q.
       Did she ever flatly refuse to do it?
            MS. KEENE: Objection to hearsay, Judge.
            THE COURT: Read the prior question and
answer back.
            THE REPORTER: "Okay. You and your wife
basically took a hard line and said this is something
you must do?"
            "Yes, sir."
            "Did she ever flatly refuse to do it?"
            THE COURT: Overruled to that one question.
Yes or no is the answer based on the state of the
record.
            MR. ROUSSEAU: Should I ask the question
again, Judge?
            THE COURT: Do you remember the question?
            THE WITNESS: Actually, I didn't hear the
whole thing.
```

```
THE COURT: Read it back to him. Read the
1
    question and answer and the followup question.
2
3
                THE REPORTER: "Okay. You and your wife
    basically took a hard line and said this is something
4
    you must do?"
5
                 "Yes, sir."
6
7
                 "Did she ever flatly refuse to do it?"
8
                THE COURT: And the answer is yes or no to
9
    that question.
10
                               No, sir.
                THE WITNESS:
11
                THE COURT: All right.
12
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) And a moment ago I asked you
13
    when did she -- when was it that she moved out of your
14
    house and I think you said 2012?
15
       Α.
           That's not correct. I'm trying to get that date
    in my head. I know it was in November.
16
                                              2010?
       Q.
           How about this. Our offense date is March of
17
18
    2011.
19
       Α.
           Yes, then it would be 2010, sir.
20
           Well, did Mechelle ever go to visit relatives in
       Q.
    California, with Asher?
21
           I don't know about California for sure, but I
22
    know that she went to Nevada.
23
24
       Q. And I apologize. That is the trip that I'm
25
    talking about.
```

- Α. Yes, sir. 1 2 Q. And about what period of time would that have been? 3 Α. 4 That would have been Christmas of the same year. 5 Q. Once she returned, did -- eventually was she able 6 to get an apartment? 7 Α. Yes, sir. 8 Q. Now, did she suddenly come into a lot of money or 9 did she find someone to help her? 10 Α. No, sir. Her aunt and grandmother helped her. 11 Q. And who are they? 12 Regina Scambler and Gail Wickman. Α. 13 Say last name again, please. The last -- Gail, Q. I'm sorry. 14 15 Wickman, I believe it is. Α. 16 Q. Regina Scambler. And that's S-C-A-M-B-L-E-R; is that correct? 17 18 Α. Yes, sir. 19 Q. Okay. A little bit of an unusual name. 20 why I thought I should spell it. 21 Did Mechelle have a cell phone? 22
 - Α. Yes, sir.
- Did Mechelle pay for the phone herself? 23 Q.
- 24 Α. No, sir.
- 25 Whose name would that phone have been under? Q.

- A. It would be under Regina Scambler's.
- Q. Tell me, when Mechelle got back from Nevada and eventually moved into her apartment, do you recall approximately when it might have been that she moved
- A. It had to be early January, early to mid January, pretty quick.
 - Q. She had not -- had she been living there very long when this happened?
- 10 A. No, sir.

into that apartment?

1

5

8

9

21

- 11 Q. Was there a date in -- well, do you know when 12 Asher's birthday was?
- 13 A. March 25th, the 25th of March.
- Q. Okay. He was 13 months old at the time of his death in March. Would his birthday have been in February?
- 17 A. Yes, I'm sorry. Yes.
- 18 Q. The 25th?
- 19 A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Okay. And did you attend a birthday party for
- 22 A. Yes, sir.

him?

- Q. A one-year-old birthday party?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And where did that party take place?

1 At Mechelle's apartment, Mechelle and Asher's Α. apartment. 2 3 Q. The same one that burned? Yes, sir. Α. 4 5 Okay. Did you ever -- well, describe that Q. 6 complex. Is it a complex that you felt comfortable her 7 living in? I mean, there are good neighborhoods and 8 bad. That's what I'm getting at. 9 Α. The neighborhood appeared okay; the complex, 10 maybe not so much. 11 Q. Did you have any concerns about their safety? 12 Α. Not really. Not safety. But the complex just, I 13 mean... 14 You would prefer to see them live somewhere Q. 15 nicer? 16 Α. Sure. Okay. Did you ever provide Mechelle with a 17 Q. 18 weapon of any sort for her own protection? 19 Α. Yes, sir. 20 Q. And what was that weapon? 21 Α. It was a 20-gauge shotgun, single-shot. 22 Single-shot, 20-gauge shotgun? Q. 23 Α. Yes, sir. 24 Q. Is it one that you already own?

25

Α.

Yes, sir.

- Q. Was there a particular reason that you gave it to her, any reason in particular?
 - A. Because I believe in guns and think you should have one to protect yourself.
- Q. And what I'm asking is, was there a specific reason, I guess I should say? For example, I'm afraid of a person, a specific person who's trying to hurt me, anything like that? Was there a specific threat that you were concerned about?
- 10 A. No, sir.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

14

18

- 11 Q. Okay. Just generally speaking, you felt that she 12 needed a weapon in the home?
- 13 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Did she know how to use it?
- 15 A. Yes, sir.
- 16 Q. Had you taught her?
- 17 A. Yes, sir.
 - Q. Did you eventually recover that weapon? Did someone bring it back to you?
- 20 A. No, sir. The City of Arlington -- the police 21 department recovered it.
- Q. But they never gave it back to you?
- 23 A. No, sir.
- Q. I want to move -- turn your attention now to the date of March 20th, 2011. Did you see Mechelle and

```
1
    Asher that day?
2
       Α.
           No, sir.
3
           Were you -- that was a Sunday. Were you working
       Q.
4
    that day?
5
           I was actually going to go in early. So I was
    sleeping quite a bit in the afternoon because I had to
6
7
    go in at 3:00 o'clock in the morning.
           Were they at your house?
8
       Q.
9
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
10
       Q.
           Mechelle and Asher were at your house that day,
11
    but you were asleep?
12
       A. Yes, sir. Asher was there. My wife was taking
13
    care of him. And Mechelle came to pick him up. Yes,
14
    sir.
15
       Q.
           Did -- so you never saw Asher or Mechelle that
16
    day?
17
       Α.
           No, sir.
18
           When is the -- how did you find out that
       Q.
19
    something had happened?
20
           I had got up to get ready for work and a police
21
    officer had called our home phone and left a message on
22
    the recorder saying that they needed to speak with us.
23
       Q.
           Did you return the call?
24
           I did not at the time. I just walked outside,
       Α.
```

walked back in, and they called again. I was able to

answer the phone at that time.

- Q. And eventually did the policer officer come to your home?
 - A. Yes. sir.
 - Q. There were two police officers?
- A. Yes, sir.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

14

15

21

22

23

24

- Q. And did they explain to you at that time that something had happened to Mechelle?
 - A. Yes, sir.
- 10 Q. Did you know yet -- did they know yet whether or 11 not Asher was okay?
- A. They did not know there was a child in that apartment.
 - Q. Did you inform them that there should have been a child in that apartment?
- 16 A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Did you do anything or did anyone in your family do anything to try and help the police locate Asher?
- 19 A. Yes, sir.
- 20 Q. What did y'all do?
 - A. We got ahold of one of the people that may watch
 Asher on occasion to see if Mechelle had dropped him off
 over there. And we also got ahold of one -- a couple of
 her friends to see if maybe they had Asher.
 - Q. Would the person who watched Asher, would her

```
1
    name by Lana Murphy?
           Yes, sir.
2
       Α.
3
       Q.
           Did Ms. Murphy eventually come to the house?
           Yes. sir.
       Α.
4
           And did any -- did the police obtain any -- were
5
       Q.
6
    they able to obtain any -- to your knowledge, and if you
7
    don't know that's fine, were they able to obtain any
8
    phone numbers to call individuals that might know where
9
    Asher had been, or where Asher was?
10
           I don't know for sure if they obtained them.
                                                            Ι
11
    believe they went to somebody's house.
           Okay. But that's just something you would have
12
       Q.
    been told, correct?
13
14
           I'm sorry?
       Α.
15
           That's just something you would have been told,
       Q.
16
    correct?
17
       Α.
           Yes.
18
       Q.
           Okay. We'll pass on that topic for now.
19
       Α.
           Okay.
20
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: May I approach, Your Honor?
21
                 THE COURT: Yes.
22
       Q.
            (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) I want to show you what I've
23
    had marked as State's Exhibit No. 164 and ask you if you
24
    recognize this photograph?
25
       Α.
           Yes, I do.
```

```
1
       Q.
           Who is depicted in that photograph?
           That's Mechelle and Asher.
2
       Α.
3
       Q.
            Is it a fair and accurate depiction of Mechelle
    and Asher as they looked shortly before their death?
4
5
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
       Q.
           Deaths?
6
7
       Α.
           Deaths, yes, sir.
8
       Q.
           Do you know where this photograph was taken?
9
       Α.
           Yes, sir. It was taken in Nevada at her
10
    grandma's house.
11
       Q.
           At Christmastime?
12
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll offer State's Exhibit
13
14
    No. 164, subject to any objection by Defense.
15
                 MS. KEENE:
                             No objection, Judge.
16
                             State's 164 is admitted.
                 THE COURT:
17
                 (State's Exhibit No. 164 admitted)
18
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: May I publish, Your Honor?
19
                 THE COURT: Yes, you may.
20
       Q.
            (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Mr. Hicks, was there a
21
    memorial service held for Mechelle and Asher?
22
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
23
       Q.
           Did you attend?
24
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
25
       Q.
           Where was that?
```

- A. At Wade Funeral Home in Arlington.
- Q. Was there a lot of people there?
- A. Standing room only, sir.
- Q. Sir, I forgot to ask you something and I realize you're feeling a little bit upset right now.
- A. Yeah.

2

3

4

5

- 7 Q. So -- and I should have asked you this earlier.
- 8 I apologize. I need to do this before I pass you over 9 to the Defense.
- Do you know Georgia's, your wife's, do you
- 11 know her cell phone number?
- 12 A. Yes, sir.
- 13 Q. And what number would that have been?
- 14 A. 269-1226.
- 15 Q. 269-1226. Do you know what area code that is?
- 16 A. 817.
- 17 Q. And do you know what Mechelle's phone number was?
- 18 A. I can't recall right offhand.
- 19 Q. Okay. Who was paying for her phone again?
- 20 A. Her Aunt Regina was.
- Q. Would it have -- and the name on the account
- 22 | would have been what?
- 23 A. Regina Scambler.
- Q. Regina Scambler?
- 25 A. Scambler.

```
Q.
            Just one moment, please.
 1
 2
                 Thank you very much, sir.
 3
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll pass the witness, Your
    Honor.
 4
 5
                 THE COURT:
                              Defense may cross.
6
                          CROSS-EXAMINATION
 7
    BY MS. KEENE:
8
       Q.
            Are you doing okay, sir?
            Yeah.
9
       Α.
            If you need a break, it doesn't mean you're not a
10
       Q.
11
    tough person.
12
       Α.
            No, I'm good.
13
           Are you okay?
       Q.
       Α.
14
            Yeah.
15
            My name is Joetta Keene and I represent Thomas
       Q.
    Olivas. You and I have never met, have we?
16
17
       Α.
            No, ma'am.
18
            Is it okay if I ask you some questions about your
       Q.
19
    stepdaughter?
20
       Α.
            Yes, ma'am.
21
            Did you ever go meet with the police and give
       Q.
22
    them a statement?
23
       Α.
            Concerning?
24
       Q.
            This case, the death of your stepdaughter.
25
            I never went and met with them and gave them a
       Α.
```

- 1 statement. I met with him. All right. When did -- who do you meet with? 2 Q. 3 Α. Detective Stewart. When did you meet with Detective Stewart? Q. 4 The first time I met Detective Stewart was about 5 Α. 6 5:00 o'clock the morning of the death. 7 Q. 5:00 a.m.? 8 Α. Yes, ma'am. 9 Q. So the first person you talked to that was a 10 police officer was one that called you on the telephone? 11 Α. Yes, ma'am. 12 Q. And was that an Officer Mathews, if you remember? I don't recall. 13 Α. About how long was the conversation you had with 14 Q. 15 the police officer on the telephone? 16 Just long enough to let me know that they were Α. 17 coming over. 18 Q. And then they came over? 19 Α. Yes, ma'am. 20 Q. And did they come over with Detective Stewart or 21 did they come over, police officers in uniform?
 - A. Two police officers in uniform came over.
 - Q. And were they male or female?
 - A. They were male.

23

24

Q. Do you remember either of their names?

A. No, ma'am.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

18

19

20

21

22

23

- Q. And about how long did you talk with the two male police officers at your house that early morning?
- A. We talked at -- for a while, until they realized that there should be a baby in that place and then they kind of stepped aside and started calling other people.
- Q. Did they ever talk to you about a person by the name of Timothy, as opposed to Thomas?
 - A. No. No, ma'am.
- Q. Was there ever a time in which you told them, you or your wife whenever you were present, about Timothy?
- A. No, ma'am.
- Q. Was there ever a time that you told Officer

 Mathews, or this other male officer, or Detective

 Stewart about this boy named Timothy was really stalking

 Mechelle in the two weeks prior?
- 17 A. No, ma'am.
 - Q. Was there ever a time that you told them that you had given the shotgun because of the stalking of Timothy two weeks earlier?
 - A. No, ma'am.
 - Q. Were you present when your wife told them anything about the shotgun and about stalking or anything like that?
- 25 A. No, ma'am.

```
Did you have any idea where Officer Mathews would
1
       Q.
    have obtained information that says that you were
2
3
    very --
                                Objection, Your Honor.
4
                 MR. ROUSSEAU:
5
    reading from a report not in evidence. It's hearsay.
                THE COURT: It sounds like it.
6
7
                MS. KEENE: I'm --
8
                 THE COURT: Or asking what -- why --
9
    sustained on other grounds of why someone else would
10
    have done something. That's not in evidence.
11
       Q.
           (BY MS. KEENE) Is that just something you've
12
    never heard of until today?
13
       Α.
           Correct.
           Okay. Did you know your daughter's boyfriends?
14
       Q.
15
           Boyfriends?
       Α.
16
       Q.
           Yes.
           I don't know that my daughter had boyfriends.
17
       Α.
18
       Q.
           Did she have a boyfriend, one?
19
       Α.
           I don't recall my daughter having a boyfriend,
20
    period. She had a lot of acquaintances but no
21
    boyfriends.
22
       Q.
           Okay. What is an acquaintance to you?
23
       Α.
           A friend, from work.
                                  I mean...
24
           Did you ever get in any conflicts with any of the
       Q.
25
    other males, friends of hers, acquaintances?
```

1 Α. No. 2 Q. Did you ever get any conflict with a male, 3 an acquaintance of hers, named Christopher Gant? 4 Α. Say that again. 5 Q. An acquaintance by the name of Christopher Gant? Any conflict? 6 Α. 7 Yeah. Any sort of dispute, argument? Q. 8 Α. Yes. 9 Q. Is that somebody that you believed was having a 10 relationship with Mechelle? 11 Α. No. 12 Q. That was just a friend? 13 Α. Yes. Was there any other persons -- or were there any 14 Q. 15 persons that you got into a conflict or verbal argument 16 with that you believed was more than just a friend of hers? 17 18 Α. No. 19 MR. ROUSSEAU: Your Honor, I'm going to 20 object to relevance. 21 THE COURT: He said no to that question, so 22 at this point I'll overrule to that, if there was any 23 conflict. He said no. You may move forward. 24 MS. KEENE: Thank you, Judge. 25 (BY MS. KEENE) Did Mechelle live with y'all Q.

```
1
    until she moved out in November or December 2010?
       Α.
2
           Yes.
3
       Q.
           Was that the first time that she had moved out of
    vour house?
4
           No.
5
       Α.
6
       Q.
           When had she moved back into your house?
                                                        Do you
7
    understand that question?
8
       Α.
           Yeah.
                   I understand. I cannot give you an exact
9
    date whenever she moved back in.
10
       Q.
           Can you give us an idea?
11
           I can give you no idea when she moved back in.
       Α.
12
       Q.
           What -- had she been living with y'all for a
13
    year?
14
           I don't recall, ma'am.
       Α.
15
           So you can't even give us an idea if it was a
       Q.
16
    month or a year or five years?
17
           I can't recall exactly.
       Α.
18
           Okay. Is it safe to say that you don't know very
       Q.
19
    much about your -- the personal dealings with -- of your
20
    daughter?
21
       Α.
           Yes.
22
           I mean, you're stepfather, correct?
       Q.
23
       Α.
           By name, yes.
24
       Q.
           Okay. You're father?
25
       Α.
           Yes.
```

```
We'll leave it at that. Because you are.
       Q.
1
                                                        You
2
    raised her since she was two.
3
                And I'm sorry I'm asking you hard questions,
    but you understand why I have to, don't you?
4
       Α.
5
           Yes.
       Q.
           Okay. Y'all had to take Asher, did you not?
6
7
       Α.
           Excuse me?
           Child Protective Services had to take --
8
       Q.
9
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Your Honor, I am going to
10
    object to that.
11
                THE COURT: Members of the jury -- time
12
    out -- we need to take a short recess. If y'all will go
13
    to the jury room, reload your coffee, we'll be right
14
    back with you.
15
                 (Jury excused from courtroom)
                THE COURT: The jury is out. I'm not
16
17
    exactly sure where you're going. I'm not exactly
18
    remembering ruling on specific motions in limine on that
    point, but discretion, valor, I'll let you ask the
19
20
    questions and then I'll make a ruling on --
21
                MS. KEENE:
                             Okay.
22
                THE COURT: -- whether or not it has
23
    anything to do with this trial, outside the jury's
24
    presence.
25
                MR. ROUSSEAU: I don't believe there has
```

been a motion in limine on that topic, Your Honor, specifically because I ask Ms. Keene if she was going to go into it with this witness and she told me no. That's why there's no motion in limine on this topic.

THE COURT: Well, and I will just say I'll allow the questions to be asked and answered outside the jury's presence and we'll go from there.

MS. KEENE: Judge, this is in response to his questions, just so you know, as you're thinking about the questions I'm going to ask, where he said could you tell us the type of -- what type of girl was Mechelle.

THE COURT: Well, and I will just say this. Under the discretion and valor rule of officers of the court, of the standing and quality and character of those involved in this trial, I might have expected you to approach, "Look, I'm fixing to go into this and I'm just giving you a heads-up as the umpire," even if the witness isn't entitled to one because he's fair game on the witness stand, as is proper. But there wasn't a specific motion and so I don't have a dog in this fight directly. But you can ask your questions and I'll determine if they're relevant.

MS. KEENE: And I apologize, Judge. I do.

VOIR DIRE EXAMINATION

1 BY MS. KEENE: 2 Q. When Asher was born, he was born with narcotics 3 in his system; is that correct? Α. Possibly. 4 5 Q. And Child Protective Services was notified, really, to come to the hospital when he was born by the 6 7 hospital? 8 Α. I can't tell you who notified who on that. 9 Q. Did you meet with Child Protective Services at 10 the hospital or within days after Asher was born? 11 I don't recall meeting with them there, no, ma'am. 12 13 Q. Did you meet with Child Protective Services at 14 all in the -- let's say, a week, within that vicinity, after Asher was born? 15 16 Α. I don't believe it was a week. I believe it was 17 a little bit longer than that. 18 And were you and your wife directed to be Q. 19 supervisors of Asher? 20 Α. That's correct. 21 Q. And that was because of the narcotics in his 22 system? 23 Α. Possible narcotics, yes. 24 And after several months of working with Child Q.

Protective Services and y'all being the supervisors,

Child Protective Services left Asher in the care of your daughter, they got out of her life?

- A. I don't think that's the correct statement. I don't believe -- there was no working with them. I believe they came out to our house for one visit to see exactly what was going on and right after that visit everything was determined to be okay.
- Q. Okay. But did you not testify that they wanted you to be the supervisor, you and your wife to be the supervisors, of Asher in regards to Mechelle?
 - A. I did say that.

- Q. Okay. When was that?
- A. That was so we could get Asher out of the hospital.
 - Q. Okay. So they came to the hospital and said basically the grandparents need to take custody of the child until we do a further investigation?
 - A. I can't tell you for sure on that because I wasn't there during that part of it. But I did have to sign him out of the hospital, yes.
 - Q. And then within a month or so they released -- they got you guys out of it?
 - A. It was pretty fast after they came to our house and had an interview with our whole family, yes.
 - Q. And so it's your testimony that they did not stay

```
1
    involved in the case after that interview?
2
       Α.
           That's correct. They did not stay involved.
3
                MS. KEENE: Well, Judge, then I would --
                THE COURT:
                            Time out.
4
5
                MS. KEENE: Sorry, Judge.
                THE COURT: Will you walk out with the
6
7
    sheriff, outside the earshot of the lawyers for just a
8
    second.
9
                (Witness excused from courtroom)
10
                THE COURT: Question one, what of that do
11
    you want to ask in the presence of the jury?
    everything you just asked outside the jury's presence,
12
13
    what do you want to ask in the presence of the jury?
14
                MS. KEENE: All of it.
15
                THE COURT: All right. And do you have
    objection to any or all of it?
16
17
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Every bit of it, Your Honor.
18
                THE COURT: All right. And your legal
19
    objection is?
20
                MR. ROUSSEAU: The legal objection is
21
    character assassination. It's irrelevant and any
22
    relevance is currently outweighed by the danger that it
23
    might be prejudice. And I did not open the door.
24
    said what type of person was she, generally speaking,
25
    what type of person was she. And his answer is
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
essentially she's a decent person. And Ms. Keene --
            THE COURT: Well, she hasn't given her
reasons yet. You don't have to respond to her reasons,
even if you're anticipating them.
            MR. ROUSSEAU: Well, I do need to respond to
address her questions themselves, though, Your Honor.
            THE COURT:
                       Okay.
            MR. ROUSSEAU:
                          Because Ms. Keene is working
from the same set of records that I have and the
narcotics that she's referring to --
            THE COURT:
                       Uh-huh.
            MR. ROUSSEAU: -- this lifelong veteran of
the criminal justice system, the narcotics that she's
referring to is marijuana, a trace of marijuana, at the
time the baby was born. That's the question she wants
to ask in front of the jury, is narcotics.
            THE COURT:
                      Well, that would explain why one
home visit and we're all done, versus meth or heroin or
lots of other things. That would clearly explain that
if this were a child welfare hearing. But having said
that, yeah, I might expect more, too, personally, but
professionally I've listened to 30-year veterans,
narcotics officers, call marijuana narcotics. And
that's not what I, as a chemistry major with
pharmacology, would call narcotics, but I hear it all
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
the time, whether I should be hearing it here or not, in
the form of questions, versus just saying marijuana.
And if I allow the questions, I'll allow you to go back
and point that out.
            But, Joetta, why is this relevant based on
current state of the record? Your turn.
            MS. KEENE: The -- that he's opened the door
to her character when he asked what type of girl was
Mechelle. And they talked about how -- the reason they
had been watching the child is because she's working all
these jobs, et cetera. And this is just to rebut what
he's already brought out. You know, quite frankly, it's
not relevant to talk about what type of girl she is in a
general sense. So just to rebut that alone, it is
admissible, in my opinion.
            THE COURT: All right. Accepting at face
value that it's arguably relevant to the generic
question of what kind of girl, what kind of daughter --
            MS. KEENE: He said girl.
            THE COURT: -- based upon the type of girl
in the context of the statement, his daughter, what kind
of girl, she lived with you, I think it's way overkill,
403, the objection is sustained.
            MS. KEENE: Well --
            THE COURT: Is there anything else of this
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
nature you feel obligated to explore with him so we
don't have the jury come in and out, in representing
your client, if there's any other --
            MS. KEENE:
                        Yeah. I --
            THE COURT: -- of those kind of things?
            MS. KEENE: -- I don't have to explore --
I -- well, I won't say it in front of him, but I --
there's another subject matter that you can rule on. I
would proffer that, Judge, she has been to a rehab for
methamphetamine addiction.
            THE COURT: Uh-huh.
            MS. KEENE: And I would like to ask him
about his knowledge of that, since he was talking about
this type of girl that she was and the struggle that
they have had with her that is beyond just a struggle of
whether or not she's going to get the money out of the
baby daddy. This has been a struggle about whether or
not she's going to quit using methamphetamine, which is
actually why the marijuana became even a bigger issue
when the baby was born that way.
            THE COURT:
                        Well, let me just ask you this.
The postmortem examination, toxicology, are there any
drugs in her system?
            MR. ROUSSEAU:
                           No, sir.
            MS. KEENE: I believe there was marijuana.
```

```
THE COURT: I mean meth, is what I meant.
1
2
    That's what --
                MS. KEENE: I don't believe there's
3
4
    methamphetamine, Judge.
5
                THE COURT:
                            Okay. Do you have any idea of
    when this rehab would have been?
6
7
                MS. KEENE: I do not.
8
                THE COURT:
                            Okay. I'll allow you to bring
9
    him in, ask him has she ever been to a meth rehab, do
10
    you know when it was, what did you know about it, what
11
    was your involvement, and then I'll send him back out
    and then we'll talk.
12
13
                MR. ROUSSEAU: You want to do that outside
14
    the presence --
15
                THE COURT: Yes. Yeah.
                                          That's why I
    said -- that's what I was telling her, if there's any
16
17
    other, let's get it out of the way so the jury isn't
18
    playing jack-in-the-box or pop-goes-the-weasel.
19
                All right.
20
                (Witness retakes the stand)
21
                THE COURT:
                            Okay. While the jury is out,
22
    there's some other issues I'm going to let them talk
23
    about and see if it's any of the jury's business or has
24
    anything to do with the trial.
25
                So while you're still here, she has some
```

```
1
    more questions, and pull your microphone back, please.
2
                All right.
                       VOIR DIRE EXAMINATION
3
    BY MS. KEENE:
4
5
           Do you have knowledge about whether or not
       Q.
    Mechelle ever went to drug rehabilitation or drug rehab?
6
7
           Not to my knowledge.
       Α.
8
       Q.
           Okay.
9
                MS. KEENE: Then that really answers --
                THE COURT: That keeps that simple.
10
11
                MS. KEENE: It does keep it simple.
12
                THE COURT: Yep.
13
       Q.
           (BY MS. KEENE)
                            Did you have problems with her
    with using methamphetamine?
14
15
           Not to my knowledge.
       Α.
16
       Q.
           Okay.
17
                MS. KEENE: That keeps it simple.
                                                     I won't
18
    ask those questions just to get a no. It's silly.
19
                THE COURT:
                           Well, no. Now you know that's
20
    not an issue. All right. All right.
21
                MS. KEENE: And, Judge, in talking to my
22
    co-counsel, really additional reason of bringing up the
23
    Child Protective Services is that at this point she's
24
    been painted as this -- as a person who's working hard,
25
    working all these jobs and the character of her is being
```

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

```
presented as one way, when, if she has had a baby,
whatever the drugs are in it, it is still to the level
that Child Protective Services is not going to let her
take the child home from the hospital.
            THE COURT: Well, let me tell you that, and
if this baby had died at five weeks old, I might say you
have a point, but the 403 objection is still sustained.
            MS. KEENE:
                        Okay.
            THE COURT: But I note your additional
argument and reconsider my rulings and it remains the
same, all right, at least based on the current state of
the record. 403 objections, ruled for or against either
side, are always subject to change when balanced against
the entire record. But as of right now, I'm very
comfortable with the decision I have made as a matter of
fact and law.
            Do any of -- either of y'all, any of y'all,
need two minutes to run get --
            MR. ROUSSEAU:
                           No, sir.
            MS. KEENE: We're good, Judge.
            THE COURT: -- coffee?
            Everybody good. All right. Go get them.
            (Jury seated in courtroom)
            THE COURT: All right. Members of the jury,
this is the kind of thing when I do my job then you have
```

to do your job where the rubber meets the road. You
will ignore the last question that was asked. I've
sustained the objection to the question. It didn't
happen. You will not consider or talk about it when you
make your decision of what are the facts of the case.
Does everyone understand my instruction?
SEVERAL JURY MEMBERS: Yes.
THE COURT: You may continue, Counsel.
MS. KEENE: We pass the witness, Judge.
MR. ROUSSEAU: No further questions, Your
Honor.
THE COURT: All right. May this witness be
excused under the prior agreement but allowed for recall
if needed?
MS. KEENE: Yes.
THE COURT: All right. You can have a seat
with the family. Just remember, you cannot talk to
anyone about anything that happens during the course of
the trial.
THE WITNESS: Thank you.
THE COURT: And thank you for coming in.
(Witness excused from the stand)
MR. ROUSSEAU: We'd call Officer Mathews.
(Witness takes the stand)
THE COURT: Then state your full, legal name

```
1
    for the court reporter and members of the jury, please.
2
                THE WITNESS: Jamon Mathews.
3
                THE COURT: All right. Corporal Mathews, I
    need you to face me and raise your right hand.
4
5
                (One witness sworn)
                THE COURT: Have you testified in district
6
7
    court?
8
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
9
                THE COURT: Are you familiar with all the
10
    rules that apply to witnesses in a criminal trial, who
11
    you may and may not talk to, where you may and may not
12
    be when testimony is being conducted?
13
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
                THE COURT: Those rules apply in this case
14
15
    as they do in most. Make sure you follow them.
16
                THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.
17
                THE COURT: All right. Kevin.
18
                MR. ROUSSEAU: Thank you, Judge.
19
                      CORPORAL JAMON MATHEWS,
20
    having been first duly sworn, testified as follows:
21
                        DIRECT EXAMINATION
    BY MR. ROUSSEAU:
22
           Would you, please, introduce yourself to the
23
       Q.
24
    jury.
25
           Officer -- or -- Corporal Jamon Mathews with the
       Α.
```

- 1 Arlington Police Department. 2 Q. Is it a recent promotion? Do what, sir? 3 Α. Q. Is it a recent promotion? 4 5 Α. About a year. Q. Okay. You're with the Arlington Police 6 7 Department, correct? 8 Α. Yes, sir. 9 Q. How long have you been with the Arlington PD? 10 Α. About seven years. 11 Is that the totality of your police experience? Q. 12 Α. I had four years prior. No. 13 Q. Where was that? I was with Irving Police Department and Iowa Park 14 Α. 15 Police Department. It's right beside Wichita Falls. What is your current assignment in Arlington 16 Q. Police Department? 17 18 I'm assigned as a corporal to North District on 19 the midnight shift and I'm also assigned to S.W.A.T. as 20 a sniper. 21 As a -- your primary responsibility being a 22 corporal in the Northern District, is that related to 23 patrol? You are a patrol supervisor? 24 A patrol -- yes, I'm a training officer. Α.
 - Q. Training officer. And have you been -- have you

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Yes, sir.

Α.

worked in patrol most of the time you've been with Arlington Fire Department -- Arlington Police Department? I apologize. Α. Yes. sir. Q. And in March of 2011 were you assigned to patrol at that time? Α. I was. Q. And what shift were you working? Α. I was working the midnight shift, which starts at 2300 hours, or 11:00 o'clock p.m., and it ends at the 0700 hours, or 7:00 a.m. Q. What are the duties of a patrol officer? Α. Patrol officers, our main responsibility is to -once dispatch calls, we answer calls for service, 9-1-1 calls for services. We also conduct investigations, whether we view them ourselves or we get dispatched. And then we also respond to -- or also conduct traffic stops, as well. Q. Okay. So if somebody calls 9-1-1, you're the one who shows up? Α. Correct. Q. At least back then? Α. Yes. Were you working the same part of town back then? Q.

- Q. Well, I want to -- we're here talking about an incident that happened on March 20th of 2011, starting just after 10:00 o'clock at night. Did you become involved in the -- did you respond to, become involved in the subsequent investigation revolving around a fire and two victims that occurred at Presidents Corner Apartment on that day?
 - A. I did.

- Q. Tell us how you came to be involved in that case.
- A. Officers were dispatched initially for -- because there was -- for the assistance of the fire department, because they had firehoses and stuff in the roadway and we generally go to assist them, to either make sure their hoses don't get ran over and we also get dispatched to assist on a fire as far as helping out with other victims and relocation and stuff like that.
- Q. And so when you first got to the scene, what did you do?
 - A. When we were first dispatched, we were advised that the fire department had located a body there at the scene.
 - Q. And was there anything -- I mean, is that unusual in a fire?
 - A. It's very unusual, yes.
- Q. Was there anything that immediately required the

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Α.

at 11:00 o'clock.

```
attention of the police department regarding that body?
       Yeah.
              The fact that the body was not burned.
The fact that the body appeared to have been stabbed and
was bleeding.
       What did you do when you found that out?
   Q.
       Myself and the other officer, we made the scene
   Α.
and began speaking with potential witnesses that might
have seen what happened with the fire investigation.
   Q.
       And is that even though -- you're not a homicide
detective, correct?
   Α.
       Right.
   Q.
       But would that -- is that the role of a patrol
officer to at least help out in the very initial
investigation, that is, asking questions of people who
are immediately on the scene?
   Α.
       It is.
       Okay. So did you talk to a woman named Celia
   Q.
Murillo?
   Α.
       I did.
   Q.
       How long had you been on duty when this all
started?
       In 2011, approximately a little over four years.
   Α.
   Q.
       No, I'm sorry, on duty that night.
```

Oh. I had -- our shift actually started at 2200,

Q. Okay.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

20

- A. We were actually notified at briefing what was going on.
- Q. Well, once you got there and you found out that there was a victim of an apparent homicide and you started -- you conducted your initial canvassing, your initial investigations, was there another duty that you were asked to fulfill?
- A. Yes, sir. We had located family members of the deceased female and I was requested to go make contact with them and make the death notification.
- Q. Do you remember how y'all were able to find out -- how you were able to come up with a number of family members?
- A. We had gotten the name from the neighbor and we did some research and discovered her name associated with her family's name through our computer system.
 - Q. So did you go to that house?
- 19 A. We did.
 - Q. Did you call first?
- A. I did. I called to make sure we did have the right location, being the address, and that also it was the correct family members so we weren't making a mistake.
 - Q. Not a mistake you want to make, is it?

- A. No, sir.
- Q. So did you go to that home?
- A. We did.

- Q. And when you got there, who did you meet with?
- A. I made contact there at the parents' address and I spoke with a Georgia Hicks, who is the biological mother of Mechelle, the deceased, and also Lester Hicks, who's the father.
- Q. Has it ever been your responsibility before to have to notify someone that a family member has died?
 - A. Yes, several times.
- Q. What's the normal routine when you have to do something like that?
 - A. Normally on the nightshift, it's a little bit different. We contact a chaplain, victim service, to assist them if they have family that has any questions, as far as funeral arrangements, what to do with the deceased, stuff like that. Midnight shift it's a little different because those type people aren't on duty, or not available to us. So we call and we just have to either sometimes do it by ourselves or that assistance will show up later.
 - Q. Did you have a chaplain with you this time?
- A. He showed up after the fact, I believe.
- Q. So when you walked into this -- these people's

home, did you know yet whether or not there was a baby who was missing?

- A. We knew there was a baby missing. We believed that there was a baby missing, just due to the fact we couldn't locate the child at the time.
- Q. So it was your understanding already that there was -- there should have been a baby in the apartment?
 - A. Yes. Correct.
- Q. Did you personally notify the parents of Mechelle that she had passed away?
- A. I did.

- Q. Okay. And what was their response?
- A. Crushed, as you can imagine. Their daughter had just been over there a couple hours ago with the son and they were pretty well devastated.
- Q. Did you make any -- did you do anything, any investigation to try to locate anybody who might have Asher?
- A. Yeah. We -- I contacted the babysitter to see if she might have Asher, being the one-year-old. We also spoke with the parents and asked if anybody -- who the father of the child was and, also, if there were any more contacts of people who might know or have Asher.
- Q. Did you -- at any time were you able to obtain the telephone number for -- well, let me ask you, did a

- person by the name of -- did the name Timothy pop up in your investigation?
 - A. It did.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

- Q. And how did you come up with the name Timothy?

 And if you need to refer to your report at any time,

 please do so, if it will help you remember.
- A. We located Timothy's name through an old cell phone number that the victim had had through Ms. Hicks.
 - Q. Was it an actual old cell phone?
- A. It was.
- 11 Q. So you're actually -- you picked the phone up and 12 scrolled through the contacts?
- 13 A. Correct.
- Q. All right. So you came up with this name

 Timothy. Did you make contact with the person named

 Timothy?
- A. I did. I called him once and then -- through that cell phone and then he called back.
- 19 Q. You called on that phone that you found his 20 number in?
- 21 A. Correct.
- Q. So this was a phone that Mechelle had previously used but was no longer using?
- 24 A. Right. But it was still working.
- Q. Okay. And you had to leave a message for him at

```
1
    first?
       Α.
2
           I did.
           And he called back?
3
       Q.
       Α.
           He did.
4
5
            I'm not going to go into all the details of what
       Q.
6
    he had to say to you, but I will ask you this. Was it a
7
    pleasant conversation?
8
       Α.
           It was not.
9
       Q.
           Was he abusive, verbally abusive?
10
       Α.
           Verbally, yes.
11
       Q.
           Did he use profanity?
12
       Α.
           He did.
13
       Q.
           Did he -- was his mood -- would you describe his
14
    mood as calm or agitated?
15
       Α.
           Extremely agitated.
           Could you hear anything in the background?
16
       Q.
17
       Α.
            It was like loud music or just kind of loudness
18
    in the background.
19
       Q.
           Okay. Could you tell -- did you have an
20
    impression one way or another about whether or not he
21
    was having difficulty hearing you?
22
            I don't know if he had difficulty hearing me, but
    I could tell it was extremely loud, which would cause a
23
24
    normal person to have difficulty.
```

Okay. Did you have a meaningful conversation in

25

Q.

```
1
    any way with him?
2
       Α.
           No.
                 It was not a good conversation.
3
           Okay. How did you end the conversation?
       Q.
           After the continued profanity, I saw we were not
4
       Α.
5
    getting anywhere so I told him that somebody else would
6
    be contacting him and I hung up the phone.
7
           Did you have a sense one way or another whether
       Q.
8
    or not the person on the end of the line might have been
    intoxicated?
9
10
           Could have been.
       Α.
11
       Q.
           Did that even occur to you, is what I'm saying.
12
    I don't want you to agree with me for --
13
           I mean, his speech was slurred, but I really
       Α.
    didn't know him from anybody else so I couldn't testify
14
15
    whether or not I believed he was.
16
           Okay. Did the name "Thomas" come up?
       Q.
           It did.
17
       Α.
18
           And how did you -- how did that name come up?
       Q.
19
       Α.
           It came up through the parents of Mechelle saying
20
    that that was the --
21
                MS. KEENE: Objection to hearsay, Judge.
22
                THE COURT: All right.
23
                 Read the question back.
24
                 THE REPORTER: "And how did you -- how did
25
    that name come up?"
```

THE COURT: Rephrase your question. 1 2 Q. (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) At some point in time did you become aware of the name Thomas? 3 Α. I did. 4 5 Q. As -- and was that person potentially significant to you in your investigation? 6 7 Α. It was. 8 Q. Did you -- were you able to obtain a telephone 9 number for Thomas? 10 Α. I did. 11 Q. And did you dial that telephone number, or I 12 guess I should say, punch it in? Α. I did. 13 And what phone did you use, if you recall? 14 Q. 15 I believed I used the house phone of the parents. Α. 16 Q. When you called the number of Thomas, do you 17 recall talking to a family member of Mechelle's, that 18 is, Mechelle Gandy, the victim? Do you recall talking 19 to family member by the name of Regina Scambler on the 20 telephone? 21 Α. Yes. That was the aunt. 22 Q. Okay. 23 Α. Who also was the one paying for the cell phone. 24 After talking to her, did you have -- were you Q. 25 able to -- did you obtain the telephone number that's --

```
for Thomas?
1
2
       Α.
            I did.
3
       Q.
           And is that -- so you called the number that she
4
    gave you?
           I did.
5
       Α.
           And when you called the number, did you actually
6
       Q.
7
    make contact with a live human being on the other end?
8
       Α.
           No.
               It was like somebody picked up and hung up
9
    real quick.
10
           Do you recall receiving -- do you recall
11
    getting -- having to leave a voice message?
           I didn't.
12
       Α.
13
           You did not, okay. I want to turn your
       Q.
    attention, please, to page four of your report.
14
                                                        It's
15
    going to be the second full paragraph down.
16
       Α.
           Okay.
           And your report, it's the original, correct?
17
       Q.
18
       Α.
           Yes, it is.
19
       Q.
           Arlington police report.
20
                 The second full sentence, and just read it
    to yourself, please, beginning with "I then
21
    contacted..."
22
23
       Α.
           Uh-huh.
24
           The number that you called, did you get a
       Q.
25
    recording?
```

- I did. Α. 1 And was there a name that was announced during 2 Q. 3 that recording? Α. It was. 4 And what was that name? 5 Q. Α. Thomas Olivas. 6 7 At any point in time did you make contact with a Q. 8 woman named -- well, why did you want to contact Thomas 01ivas? 9 To see if we could locate Asher's whereabouts, 10 Α. 11 due to the fact that he was the father of the child. 12 Q. Was there any -- other than the fact he was the 13 father of the child, was there any reason to suspect that he might have been with him? 14 15 Α. No. 16 Q. You were just checking everything? 17 Α. Right. 18 Did you have any contact at any point with a Q. 19 woman named Rebeca? 20 Α. I did. 21 Q. How did you come into contact with her? 22 I was given that cell phone number by the aunt, Α. 23 as well.
 - Q. And this is -- you're getting this information from the aunt in a telephone call, correct?

A. Correct.

- Q. So you called this woman named Rebeca. And did you make contact with her?
 - A. I did.
- Q. While you were speaking with Rebeca, can you tell us, describe whether -- well, were you able to get a sense of what her mental state was during that telephone call?
- A. Yes. She was -- when I asked her about Thomas and his whereabouts and what I was calling about, she became very nervous, extremely afraid.
- Q. How did -- how were you able to tell that she was extremely afraid?
 - A. She was just -- her voice was breaking up. She was extremely -- kind of like "what's going on," asking basically a thousand questions about, you know, what was happening, to the point she was so afraid I actually had to dispatch officers over to her residence due to the fact she feared for her safety so much.
 - Q. Would they have been Arlington officers?
- 21 A. No, sir.
 - Q. Tell us what you had to do.
 - A. I had to contact Grapevine PD and actually have them dispatched over there.
 - Q. And did you hang up the phone and let it go at

```
1
    that, after requesting the dispatch?
                 I actually stayed on the phone with her
2
       Α.
           No.
3
    until Grapevine PD arrived on scene.
           And I'm not going to go into all the things that
       Q.
4
5
    Rebeca might have told you, but did you come away from
    it with the understanding that there was some connection
6
7
    between Rebeca and Thomas Olivas?
8
       Α.
           Yes, there was.
9
       Q.
           Did you come away from it with an understanding
10
    that there was some connection between Rebeca and
11
    Mechelle Gandy?
12
       Α.
           Yes.
13
       Q.
           Did she tell you what she was afraid of?
14
                 MR. MOORE: Your Honor, I --
15
                 MS. KEENE: Object --
16
                 MR. MOORE: -- object to that. That's
17
    hearsay.
18
                 THE COURT: Sustained in the -- based on the
19
    current record.
20
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: Give me just a moment.
21
                 (Pause in proceedings)
22
       Q.
           (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) At some point in time did you
    become aware that the body of Asher Olivas had been
23
    located?
24
25
       Α.
           I did.
```

- Q. How did you become aware of that, sir?
- A. I was made aware by Arlington arson investigators that Asher had been found there in his room.
 - Q. Where were you at the time you found that out?
 - A. I was at Mechelle's parents' house, the Hicks.
 - Q. What did you do when you found out?
- A. I went outside and spoke with the chaplain and also victim assistance, along with the other officer that was there, and made aware of what I was about to tell the family, that we had located Asher.
- Q. Then what did you do?

- A. Due to the fact that I had -- made some, I guess, some camaraderie or, I guess, made relationship with the family, I went ahead and made the notification to both of the parents.
- Q. And what happened when you made that notification?
- A. Ms. Hicks collapsed to the floor. She was very distraught. Mr. Hicks went to a table, basically started kind of pounding his fists on the table and put his head down. They were both uncontrollably sobbing.
- Q. Was there anything about their house that caught your attention?
- A. Yeah. All of Asher's -- all of the baby toys, diapers, clothes, stuff like that, was still there in

```
1
    the living room when we made the notification, as if
2
    they had just left.
3
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I'll pass the witness, Your
    Honor.
4
5
                         CROSS-EXAMINATION
    BY MS. KEENE:
6
7
       Q.
           How are you doing?
8
       Α.
           Well, ma'am.
9
       Q.
           Did you bring your report with you?
10
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
11
       Q.
           Is it five pages long?
12
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
13
                 MS. KEENE: Can I approach him just to make
14
    sure it's the same report, Judge?
                 THE COURT:
15
                             Yes.
16
                 MS. KEENE: And may I approach the board,
    Judge?
17
18
                 THE COURT: Yes.
                                    The write-on-it board?
19
                 MS. KEENE: The write-on-it board, Judge.
20
                 THE COURT: All right. Sheriff, will you
21
    get the write-on-it board up here, please.
22
                             Thank you, Judge.
                 MS. KEENE:
23
                 (Pause in proceedings)
24
       Q.
            (BY MS. KEENE) About what time did you get the
25
    call to respond on this call, on this case?
```

```
2300 hours, being 11:00 p.m.
1
       Α.
2
       Q.
           About 11:00 p.m. And at 11:00 p.m. where did you
3
    go?
4
            I went straight to the apartments.
       Α.
5
       Q.
           So you went to the -- what would you --
    Presidents --
6
7
       Α.
           The Presidents Corner apartment complex.
8
       Q.
           Presidents Corner Apartments.
9
                 And at Presidents Corner Apartments did you
10
    talk to any potential witnesses or anybody in
11
    particular?
12
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am. I spoke with the neighbor at
13
    Apartment 603.
14
           And who was that that you talked to?
       Q.
15
    neighbor? What was her name?
16
       Α.
           Her name was Celia Murillo.
           C-E-L-I-A and M --
17
       Q.
18
       Α.
           M-U-R-I-L-L-O.
19
       Q.
            L-L-O. And I believe you testified it was Celia
20
    that gave you the parents' phone number?
21
       Α.
            No.
                 They didn't give me the phone number.
22
    just gave me Mechelle's name, and then we located the
```

family contact with our computer system.

23

24

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

to figure out who her family member was? Just her name and about how old she was Yeah. and then we found the parents and... Q. And was there anybody else that you talked to at the scene? Α. No. When you got there at 11:00 o'clock, was Mechelle Q. still there? Α. She was. Had she already been declared deceased? Q. Α. She had. So what did the scene look like? Q. There was fire department people everywhere. A Α. bunch of people were outside. Mechelle was there laying in the parking lot with a white sheet over her. And were -- are you the first officer on the Q. scene? Α. One of the first. Probably three. Three or four. What do you do as a police officer to preserve a Q. crime scene if there's been a crime that took place, which clearly there had been in this case? I mean, you start contacting witnesses and stuff

and if there's an area to be blocked off, then you block

it off with crime scene tape.

- Q. And was that done in this case?
- 2 A. I'm not sure.

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

- Q. Was that your duty?
- A. That was not my duty, no.
- Q. How -- explain to the jurors just in a brief way, how do those duties -- how is that determined?
- A. Normally when a -- like the beat officer, or the person that's the initiating officer that's actually responsible for the scene, they might start divvying up duties. Sometimes the senior officer or sometimes a corporal will also start divvying up duties, along with the sergeant, once they arrive on the scene.
- Q. Who in this case was responsible for -- for preserving the crime scene, if you know?
- A. I'm not sure who was in charge of preserving the crime scene.
- Q. So what were your duties out there that night?
 - A. My duty, I made contact with the witness next door. And then once locating the parents and where they lived, I went over there to make contact with them.
 - Q. When you talked to Celia, was she there with her boyfriend, Mr. Lopez?
- A. She was. She said she was staying there with him.
- Q. Did you physically see Mr. Lopez?

- Α. I believe I saw him -- I can't recall. 1 2 Q. Do you recall whether or not -- certainly from 3 your report you did not get a statement from him? No, I did not. Α. 4 5 Do you know whether or not he had been taken Q. 6 anywhere else to give a statement at that point? 7 Α. I'm not sure. 8 Q. Okay. At the scene is there anybody else that 9 you talked to other than Celia? 10 Α. No. 11 Q. All right. So now this is 11:00 o'clock. About 12 how long -- and you don't have to be perfect because I 13 know you didn't document the times exact, but about how 14 long are you at the scene? 15 Α. I'm not sure. 16 Q. About what time do you end up at the Hicks' 17 house? Is that the next place you went? 18 Α. Yes, ma'am, it was. 19 Q. Can you --20 Α. I don't know exactly what time I went over there, 21 no.
 - Q. After midnight-ish?

- A. I don't really recall.
- Q. So just the next -- can we just call it the next thing you did?

A. Yes, ma'am.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

21

24

- Q. And you did not document that in your report, did you?
- A. No, not the time what I went over there. I'm sure that's in the call history, of the call.
- Q. How would that be in the call history so that we could -- rather than saying next thing you did, actually have a time for it?
- A. I guess, you would have to get records or something. I'm not really sure how you would obtain that information.
- Q. Is that something that you normally put in your reports, the times and the people you talk to?
 - A. No, because it's handled through dispatch.
- Q. Okay. Is that something that you can get your hands on, though?
- A. I don't -- it expires after a certain number of years, I'm sure.
- Q. Okay. So we just have no idea what time you did anything then except for 11:00 o'clock?
 - A. Correct.
- Q. Okay. All right. So the next thing that you did
 was go to the Hicks' house; is that correct?
 - A. That's correct.
 - Q. And at the Hicks' house you talked to both of her

```
1
    parents; is that correct?
2
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
3
       Q.
            Is there anybody else you talked to at the Hicks'
    house?
4
5
            I believe the babysitter, as well. She ended up
6
    showing up later.
7
       Q.
           All right. And what was the babysitter's name?
8
    So the babysitter shows up at the Hicks' house?
9
       Α.
           Yes, after I contacted her. Lana Murphy.
           So you talked to -- well, we might as well put
10
       Q.
11
    all their names now. Georgia Hicks; is that correct?
12
       Α.
           Yes.
           You talked to Lester Hicks?
13
       Q.
14
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
15
           And then about how long were you there before the
       Q.
    babysitter showed up, Lana Murphy?
16
17
       Α.
           I don't know.
18
           Do you have any idea?
       Q.
19
       Α.
           No.
20
       Q.
           Okay.
21
       Α.
            It was after I contacted her on a cell phone she
22
    showed.
           So you talked to the Hicks and from the Hicks you
23
       Q.
24
    then called the babysitter?
```

Yeah. And it's Lana, L-A-N-A. I don't know if

25

Α.

```
1
    that makes a difference.
2
       Q.
           All right. Well, do you notice on page one you
3
    wrote it L-Y-N-A?
       Α.
           Well, it's called in through data entry, so...
4
5
       Q.
           All right.
           It's at the bottom. It's L-A-N-A Murphy.
       Α.
6
7
           So you think her name is spelled L-A-N-A?
       Q.
8
       Α.
           I believe so.
9
       Q.
           Do you care?
10
       Α.
           She might.
           Okay. Well, this is your report where it's
11
       Q.
12
    L-Y-N-A.
13
           Right. Well, like I said, we call in our report,
       Α.
14
    so that might have been data entry --
15
       Q.
           Okay.
16
       Α.
           -- missing it --
17
       Q.
           All right. So after "next thing you did," you go
18
    to the Hicks' house, you talked to the Hicks, you talked
19
    to Lana, and got information from all of them, correct?
20
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
           Do you recall, from any of these folks, so far,
21
       Q.
22
    did you receive any information about a shotgun or a
23
    shotgun being present at the crime scene?
```

Not what he advised you, but -- so it was Lester

Lester Hicks advised me that --

24

25

Α.

Q.

Yes.

- Hicks that gave you information about the shotgun? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. It was not Georgia Hicks or Lana Murphy? No. ma'am. Α. Q. And what did Lester Hicks tell you about the shotgun? That he had given it to his daughter, Mechelle, Α. for protection from Thomas, Timothy and the fact that she lived in Presidents Corner, which is a rougher neighborhood. Q. And about how long prior to the date that you're there, in which she's been murdered, had he given her that shotgun? Page five. Α. Approximately two weeks ago. Q. All right. So about two weeks prior to her being murdered basically her father is giving her a shotgun for protection from a couple of individuals? Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. As well as his concern about the apartment complex? Α. Yes, ma'am. And so the name Timothy and Thomas, you had two Q.
- 22

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

23

- different names and then you had just a generic idea about the apartment complex?
- 25 Α. Yes, ma'am.

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Α.

Yes, ma'am.

Q. And based on the next -- what was the next thing you did after you talked to these folks and Ms. Lana Murphy? Α. Correct. Q. What did you do next? After he talked about the shotgun is when we Α. found out about Asher being deceased. Q. Okay. So that's when you got the notification and you're no longer looking for -- which is really Lana Murphy -- looking for the baby, correct? Α. Right. We were looking for, you know, Asher the entire time. Q. Right. So I'm getting that. You guys leave and you want to know where is the baby, we see it clearly as someone who's been murdered? Correct. Α. And she has a baby and where is the baby, so Q. you're going to the grandparents, you're going to the babysitter? Α. The aunt. Everybody. Q. Aunt? Yes, ma'am. Α. Anybody that could potentially have the child so Q. you can just find it, correct?

Along the way you're also hearing other 1 Q. information; is that correct? 2 3 Α. Yes, ma'am. Q. And after you get the notification about Asher, 4 5 them finding his body, did you do anything else in this case? 6 7 Α. I made the notification to the family. 8 Q. You said you talked to somebody that had a 9 relationship with Thomas? 10 Α. With -- oh, yes. The -- I guess he had -- it was -- he was the father of two children. 11 12 Q. What was that person's name? Celia. 13 Α. And so you testified earlier that her name was 14 Q. 15 Rebeca, but in your police report the name is Celia; is that correct? 16 17 Where are you saying the Rebeca reference is at? Α. 18 Q. I don't see a Rebeca reference. That's why I'm 19 asking you. You testified her name was Rebeca. 20 police report, on page five, the only name I see is Celia. And I don't see a last name. 21 22 Α. Celia Murillo. 23 Q. All right. Do you believe that Celia Murillo was 24 the person that was hysterical on the phone that you

25

called and talked to?

```
Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
1
2
       Q.
           Okay. And so after you talked to her at the
3
    scene, you then later called her and talked to her?
                  She actually called me back.
       Α.
           Yeah.
4
5
       Q.
           Okay. I just feel like we're on two different
    pages. Okay? Celia Murillo is the person who was at
6
7
    the scene and was the neighbor. Okay?
8
                THE COURT: Is that a question?
9
                MS. KEENE: Well, I'm -- yeah, that's a
10
    auestion.
               Is that a -- that is a question.
11
                THE COURT: Is that correct?
12
                THE WITNESS: Okay. Yeah. Celia had called
13
    me, but Celia is clearly not the girlfriend, or
    whatever, of Thomas. It was -- Celia was the neighbor.
14
    The other female was Rebeca.
15
16
       Q.
           (BY MS. KEENE) Okay. Where do you see that in
17
    the report that her name is Rebeca?
18
       Α.
           Okay. I don't see it in my report.
19
       Q.
           In the report she's called Celia without a last
20
    name; is that correct?
21
       Α.
           Yes, she is.
22
           All right. So -- and it's a long night and
       Q.
23
    you're dealing with a difficult case. I understand
24
    that. But in your report you called her Celia?
25
           Yes, that's correct.
       Α.
```

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

Q.

Q. And so there was another person that was different than the neighbor that you talked to on the telephone? Α. Correct. Q. Celia. And this Celia I believe you described as being upset; is that correct? Α. Yes. Q. Nervous. In the police report you actually describe her as being hysterical? Α. That's correct. Q. And she was hysterical without you telling her what had happened; is that correct? Α. That's correct. And so that concerned you, or at least that was Q. enough to you for you to note it in your police report --A. Yes, ma'am. Q. -- as being important; is that correct? Α. Yes, ma'am. And basically you pick up the phone and you call Q. somebody named Celia, Rebeca, or whatever, somebody that's related to Thomas, seems to be a baby mama, and she becomes very hysterical? Correct. Α.

Okay. To the point that you get the Grapevine

```
1
    Police Department to go see her, correct?
2
       Α.
           That's correct.
3
       Q.
           And this person named Celia, Rebeca, whatever,
4
    you stay on the phone with until Grapevine shows up?
5
       Α.
           That's correct.
       Q.
           Did you have any information from Grapevine or
6
7
    anybody about this person named Celia, Rebeca, that
8
    you're talking to on the phone?
9
       Α.
           Okay. I mean, it's not the neighbor Celia.
10
    misspoke in my report as far as either the name or it
11
    was copied down wrong by data entry.
12
       Q.
           And that's why -- I'm putting "Celia" because you
13
    said it there, but it -- basically it's the girlfriend?
14
       Α.
           Right.
15
           Thomas' girlfriend?
       Q.
           Yes, ma'am.
16
       Α.
           Whatever her name is?
17
       Q.
18
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
19
       Q.
           Your report is a mess when it's dealing with this
20
    name, correct?
21
       Α.
           Yeah, just that name.
           Well, and some other names, as well, but we'll
22
       Q.
23
    leave you alone. Okay?
24
       Α.
           Okay.
25
           This is basically, though, Thomas' girlfriend,
       Q.
```

1 how about we just do that. Right? Α. 2 That will work. 3 Q. All right. So after you talked to Thomas' girlfriend, was the last thing that you did on the case? 4 Yes, ma'am. 5 Α. 6 Q. All right. When did you talk to this person by 7 the name of Timothy? 8 Α. While I was over there at the parents' address, the --9 10 Q. So at --11 Α. -- Hicks' address. 12 Q. -- at the Hicks you actually called and talked to 13 Timothy? 14 Yes, ma'am. Α. 15 And this is when he was very verbally abusive to Q. 16 you, correct? Yeah. He was upset that I had called him after 17 Α. 18 midnight. 19 And he called you names and whatever. So y'all 20 did not have a productive conversation? 21 Α. No, we did not. 22 Did you have an understanding that this was the Q. 23 same Timothy that Lester had talked about, that you were 24 calling the right Timothy?

Yeah. Based on the phone number that I had

25

Α.

```
1
    gotten from the aunt, or based on the phone number I'd
2
    gotten off the cell phone.
3
       Q.
           Okay.
       Α.
           The old cell phone.
4
5
       Q.
           And other than talking to Timothy and -- was
6
    there anybody else you called while there -- well, you
7
    said the aunt?
8
       Α.
                 I'd spoken with the aunt, along with the
9
    babysitter, as well, on the cell phone.
10
       Q.
           Okay. Did you get a last name for Timothy?
11
       Α.
           I did not. He wouldn't give it to me.
           What about -- well, that's true. He wouldn't
12
       Q.
13
    talk to you, really.
14
                 What about the aunt, what is the aunt's
15
           Because you talked to them also at the house; is
    that correct?
16
           Yes, ma'am.
17
       Α.
18
       Q.
           All right. What's the aunt's name?
19
       Α.
           Lana Murphy.
20
           Okay. Lana Murphy.
       Q.
21
       Α.
           No, that's the babysitter.
22
       Q.
           Babysitter. Exactly.
23
       Α.
           That's the babysitter.
24
       Q.
           What's the aunt's name? How about Regina
```

Scrambler (sic)? Does that help?

25

```
Let me find it so I don't misspeak.
1
       Α.
2
                 That's correct.
3
       Q.
           All right. And do you have any idea about what
4
    time you talked to Regina Scrambler?
            It was sometime after midnight.
5
       Α.
       Q.
           So that's after midnight?
6
7
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
8
       Q.
           And, really, what Regina is doing is she's --
9
    she pays for Mechelle's cell phone, correct?
10
       Α.
           Correct.
11
       Q.
           So she could go online and look at the phone
12
    bill, correct?
13
       Α.
           Yes.
14
       Q.
           Realtime?
15
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
           And so she could give you names and phone numbers
16
       Q.
17
    of people that she thought may be relevant for you to
18
    look at now that she knew her niece was deceased?
19
       Α.
           Correct.
20
           Whether that's somebody that talked to her that
       Q.
21
    day or phone numbers as she's looking at the thing, that
22
    seemed to matter to her?
23
       Α.
           Correct.
24
           And so you made some of those phone calls,
       Q.
25
    whether it be to Timothy, whether it be to Thomas'
```

```
1
    girlfriend or whoever, correct?
2
       Α.
           Correct.
           And also to Thomas?
       Q.
3
       Α.
           Yes.
4
5
           Was Thomas the last person that you talked to or
       Q.
    was it -- or tried, attempted to talk to or was it
6
7
    Celia?
8
       Α.
           No.
                 It was the -- it was Thomas' girlfriend.
9
       Q.
           Thomas' girlfriend is the last person that you
    talked to?
10
11
       Α.
           Yes, ma'am.
12
       Q.
           When did you attempt to call Thomas Olivas?
            I don't know if it was before or after I
13
       Α.
14
    attempted to contact Timothy.
15
       Q.
           Was it at the Hicks' house?
           It was.
16
       Α.
17
           Okay. So also up here is Thomas. So sometime
       Q.
18
    after midnight or after -- between 11:00 o'clock -- but
19
    now we're getting into midnight. You begin contacting
20
    Timothy, Thomas and Thomas' girlfriend?
21
       Α.
           Correct. It was between probably midnight and
22
    about 2:00 a.m. when I was trying to contact Timothy and
23
    Thomas.
24
       Q.
           These two are between midnight and 2:00 a.m.?
25
       Α.
           I believe so. Yes.
                                  So . . .
```

```
That's between 12:00 and 2:00 a.m.;
 1
       Q.
           All right.
    is that correct?
 2
 3
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
       Q.
            All right. What time did you finish with
 4
 5
    everything that you did on this case, basically by
6
    ending up out at Grapevine Police Department?
 7
       Α.
            I never went to Grapevine Police Department.
8
       Q.
           You did not?
9
       Α.
           No, ma'am.
10
       Q.
            You just stayed on the telephone with them?
11
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
12
       Q.
           Until Grapevine arrived?
           Yes, ma'am.
13
       Α.
           And then you were done with this case?
14
       Q.
15
           Yes, ma'am.
       Α.
16
           You went home and called in the report?
       Q.
17
       Α.
            I called it there at the police station.
18
       Q.
           Okay.
19
                 MS. KEENE: Judge, we'd offer in Defense
20
    Exhibit No. 5.
21
                 MR. ROUSSEAU: I have no objection, Your
22
    Honor.
23
                 THE COURT: You want to identify for the
24
    record what it is?
25
                 Do you want to identify for the record what
```

```
1
    it is that you're offering?
2
                MS. KEENE: Yes. It is a summary and
3
    timeline of Officer Mathews, the witnesses he talked to,
    the chicken scratch that I put on the board.
4
5
                THE COURT: Oh, what you've been writing on,
    all right.
6
7
                MS. KEENE: Yes.
8
                THE COURT: No objection. It's admitted.
9
                (Defendant's Exhibit No. 5 admitted)
10
                THE COURT: What I'll call -- I've been
11
    calling them posters. They're actually individual
    pages of the Court's easel and each side has been
12
13
    marking as they've written on them. And they'll be
14
    separately, preserved at the conclusion of testimony.
15
                You may continue.
16
                MS. KEENE: Judge, that's all I have.
                                                         I'll
17
    pass the witness.
18
                       REDIRECT EXAMINATION
19
    BY MR. ROUSSEAU:
20
       Q.
           I need to clarify a couple of things, because I
    think it might a little confusing.
21
22
                You went to the scene originally, correct?
23
       Α.
           To Presidents Corner, yes.
           To Presidents Corner. I mean the scene of the
24
       Q.
25
    murders?
```

Α. Yes. 1 2 Q. And you made initial contact with a witness named 3 Celia Murillo, correct? Yes, sir. Α. 4 5 Q. And this is not the person that you later talked to on the phone, right? 6 7 Α. No, it's not. 8 Q. Okay. The person you later talked to on the 9 phone, who you indicated in your report was named Celia, 10 was actually the girlfriend of Thomas Olivas, correct? 11 Α. Correct. She gave her address and everything. 12 Q. And what is the address that she gave? 13 She gave 214 Brookside in Grapevine, Texas. Α. Grapevine, Texas? 14 Q. 15 Yes, sir. Α. 214 Brookside? 16 Q. 17 Α. Yes, sir. 18 And did she indicate clearly that she knows Q. 19 Thomas Olivas? 20 Α. She did. 21 Q. Did she indicate clearly that they were -- had been a live-together couple? 22 23 Α. Yes, sir. 24 Okay. Did she indicate clearly that she was Q. 25 afraid?

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

```
MS. KEENE: Your Honor, I'm going to object
to this, Judge. I mean, we've identified it's Thomas'
girlfriend, even on the board, he made a mistake on the
name and identified as Thomas' girlfriend. We don't --
didn't get to go into every single hearsay statement.
            THE COURT:
                        What about Rule 106 and 107,
Texas Rules of Criminal Evidence?
            MS. KEENE: 106 and 107?
            THE COURT:
                        Optional completeness, part and
parcel of a conversation.
            MS. KEENE: I disagree with that.
            THE COURT:
                        Huh?
            MS. KEENE: Based on what?
            THE COURT: Y'all approach.
            Members of the jury, ignore the little man
behind the curtain. Let me talk to the lawyers a
minute.
            (Discussion at the bench, off the record)
            THE COURT: I will allow a limited fleshing
out of a conversation that's already in evidence from
both sides, or parts of which.
            Within the limits of Rule 403, you may
proceed.
   Q.
       (BY MR. ROUSSEAU) Okay. In any event, you did
talk to this person and you stayed on the scene -- you
```

```
stayed on the phone with her long enough for police officers from Grapevine to arrive at her location, correct?
```

- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And how is it that you knew they had arrived at her location?
 - A. Because I spoke with Grapevine PD on the phone.
 - Q. Okay.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

17

18

19

20

21

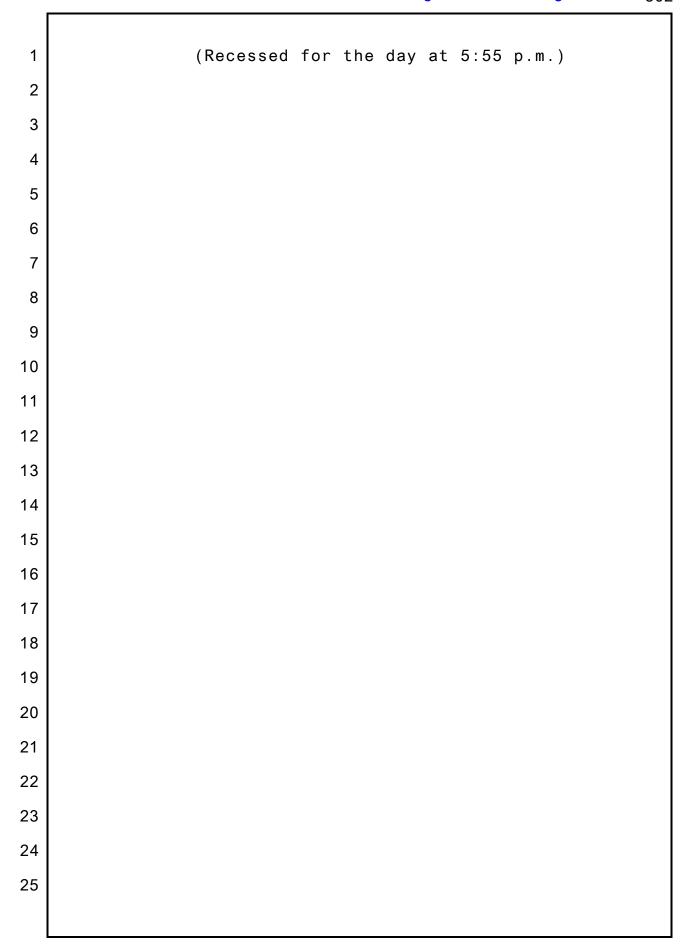
22

23

- A. And advised him of kind of what was going on.
- Q. All right. You were aware that they had actually gotten to where she was?
- 12 A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Okay. Now, there was an issue regarding Lana
 versus Lana -- I mean -- I'm sorry -- Lana versus Lyna.
 I believe your -- in your report the name was listed as
 L-Y-N-A at some point.
 - Tell the jury how the -- this report is made.
 - A. In Arlington we call in our reports to a computer system and then they're later pulled off of the system by what's called data entry personnel. And then they sit there on headphones and they type up the reports of what officers called in.
- Q. All right. So this issue with is her name Lana, L-A-N-A; Alana, A-L-A-N-A, or Lyna, L-Y-N-A, could

```
1
    simply be the product of someone not understanding your
 2
    spoken word?
 3
       Α.
           Correct.
       Q.
           All right. In any event, would that person be
 4
    the babysitter of Asher Olivas?
 5
6
       Α.
            They are.
 7
           And did you speak to that person?
       Q.
8
       Α.
            I did.
9
       Q.
           And was that person helpful to you in the
10
    investigation that you were conducting that night?
11
       Α.
           She was.
12
       Q.
           And you talked to on the -- you talked to
13
    Ms. Regina Scambler, also, correct? Regina Scambler
    being the aunt of the victim?
14
15
           Yes, sir.
       Α.
           And you were able to verify that she was, in
16
       Q.
    fact, the victim's aunt, correct?
17
18
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
19
       Q.
           And she provided the victim's cell phone?
20
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
21
       Q.
            That's why she had these records to go through,
22
    right?
23
       Α.
           Yes, sir.
24
           And she -- you have in your report that it's
       Q.
25
    a Verizon account; is that correct?
```

```
Α.
           Yes, sir.
1
2
                MR. ROUSSEAU: That's all I have, Your
3
            I'll pass the witness.
                MS. KEENE:
4
                            I don't have anything, Judge.
                THE COURT:
                            May this witness be excused?
5
                MS. KEENE:
                            Subject to recall, Judge.
6
7
                THE COURT: All right. Not to stay down
8
    here but back on reasonable notice?
9
                MS. KEENE:
                           Absolutely.
                THE COURT: All right.
10
                All right. You won't have to be on --
11
    you'll be on call. You don't have to be here. If they
12
13
    need you back, they'll give you at least a half days'
    a notice of when to be back. Hopefully more than that.
14
15
    Otherwise just -- you're going to be in town for the
    next two weeks?
16
                THE WITNESS: Yes, Judge. Yes, Judge.
17
18
                THE COURT: That will be good. Then you're
19
    excused tonight, subject to witness rules, and thanks
20
    for coming in.
21
                THE WITNESS:
                              Thank you, Judge.
22
                THE COURT: Do me a favor. Hold tight.
23
                Members of the jury, tomorrow morning be at
    your pickup point at a quarter till. We'll start at
24
25
    9:00. Thank you for a long time day.
```



COURT REPORTER'S CERTIFICATE 1 THE STATE OF TEXAS 2 COUNTY OF TARRANT 3 I, Karen B. Martinez, Official Court Reporter in and 4 5 for the 372nd District Court of Tarrant County, State of Texas, do hereby certify that the above and foregoing 6 7 contains a true and correct transcription of all 8 portions of evidence and other proceedings requested in 9 writing by counsel for the parties to be included in 10 this volume of the Reporter's Record, in the 11 above-styled and numbered cause, all of which occurred 12 in open court or in chambers and were reported by me. 13 I further certify that this Reporter's Record of the 14 proceedings truly and correctly reflects the exhibits, 15 if any, admitted by the respective parties. 16 I further certify that the total cost for the 17 preparation of this Reporter's Record is located at the 18 end of Volume 21. 19 WITNESS MY OFFICIAL HAND this the 30th day of March, 20 2015. /s/ Karen B. Martinez 21 22 Karen B. Martinez, Texas CSR 6735 Expiration Date: 12/31/2015 23 Official Court Reporter 372nd District Court 24 Tarrant County, Texas (817)884 - 299625 kbmartinez@tarrantcountv.com